

A NEW
SPANISH
GRAMMAR,

More perfect than any hitherto publish'd.
All the ERRORS of the former being
Corrected, and the RULES for Learning
that Language much improv'd.

To which is added, A
VOCABULARY
Of the most necessary WORDS:
Also a COLLECTION of
PHRASES and DIALOGUES
Adapted to
FAMILIAR DISCOURSE.

By Capt. JOHN STEVENS, Author
of the large SPANISH DICTIONARY.

The SECOND EDITION.
The whole Improved, Corrected, and Amended,
By SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.

London:
Printed for T. MEIGHAN in Drury-Lane,
T. Cox at the Lamb under the Royal-Ex-
change, and J. WOOD in Pater-noster-row.

MDCCXXXIX.



A L

Mui ilustre y noble Señor

Don *GUILL ELMO STANHOPE*,

Señor Barón de *HARRINGTON*,

Embaxadór que fue en la Corte de Espáña, Plenipotenciário en los Congressos de Sevilla, y Soissons; y al presente uno de los Principáles Secretarios de Estado de su Magestád Británica, del Conséjo de su Mag^d. &c.

Exc^{mo}. Señor.

O dexára en mi de ser animosidád temeraria, el ponér éste libro à los piés de V. Ex. si su buén índole y afabilidád no le quitássen el ser Ossadía.

El Nombre de Stanhope es tan conocido en Espáña, de tantos áños à ésta parte; y su mui ilustre y noble Prospria, tan altamente respetáda y aplaudida, que nunca cederá al olvido su Memoria: yá

D E D I C A T I O N.

por las Múchas y continuadas Embaxádas conque han ilustrádo aquella Corte ; yá por las heróicas hazañas, que, en tiempo de Guerra, han merecido los aplausos de la Európa tóda ; ò yá por la tranquilidad, que han sugerido en vários Congréssos para el bién público. En tiempo de Páz, les ha venerado la Espáña como Nativos de aquél País, y en tiempo de Guerra les há considerado tan Galánes como Valerosos. En recíproca benevoléncia, siempre aquélla familia há mostrado tál inclinación y Cariño à los de aquella nación, que, paréce, le asiste una propensión innáta à beneficiarles y protegerles.

'Esto es, loque esfuerza mi humildad à ofrecér à su Ex. éste tenuíssimo obsequio ; pues V. E. há heredado, como que en compléxo, lo heróico y especiales prerrogativas de la familia tóda : há seguido los pássos, continuado los progrésos, y adelantado la glória de sus Antecessóres. Hái muchos, que confágran sus libros à Príncipes y Proceres, ajenos del conocimiento de que trátan, dando por motivo la necesidad de su protección contra los Malévolos (como si con el libro no se comprássse la libertad de murmurár del) : Mas cuerdos y menos Lisonjeros éran los Antiguos, que dedicában los súyos, ò à sus Amigos, ò algún Príncipe inteligente, à quién, por razón del argumento, se le debía la obra. Y revocando yo al uso moderno la práctica de los Antiguos, Nádie podrá negár mi acierto en la elección de V. E. pues elijo à Persóna tan benemérita, que puéde juzgár y aprobar : luégo en vánlo solicitará yo à V. E. pára la acceptacion, quando de justicia se le débe ésta dedicatória. Sé bién, que el tributárle elogios, será ofendér su Modéstia : Porloque suplico, folo, elque V. E. se digne de recibir y patrocinár ésta obrilla, como à demostración de mi Afecto y Veneración. En cás, que V. E. halláre algo de su agrado

D E D I C A T I O N.

grádo y mereciére su aprobación, me quedará el consuélo de decírle, loque Horácio à su Mecénas :

Magnum hoc ego duco, quod placui tibi.

Y la obligación de rogár à Diós, le G^{dc}. y prospére por dilatados áños : Assegurándole, que en tanto me tendrá por felíz, en quanto publicaré que fói, con el debido rendimiento, de

V. Exc^a.

El mas humilde y Obediente servidór

Q. B. S. M.

SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.



THE P R E F A C E.

TON a careful Examination of this Grammar, (altbo' the best that is extant,) I found the Rules laid down so very deficient and incorrect, that I thought I could not do the Publick a greater Service, than by presenting them with one more perfect. This induced me to undertake the Correction of it; to lay down a new, modern, and approved Orthography and Etymology; and to add so many necessary Rules to it, that the Reader, who is acquainted with the former Edition, will hardly know that this is STEVENS'S GRAMMAR. I do not intend to undervalue what others have done of this Nature: What I can say without Presumption is, that I have consulted all former Grammars, and inserted in this what I have found well grounded: I have rectified Abundance of Mistakes, which other Authors have passed over, and corrected others laid down by them as established Rules; and I leave the Learned to Judge of the many Improvements made in this Edition.

The

The P R E F A C E.

The Rules for the true Pronuntiation are as clearly expressed as can be done in Writing. The Articles and Parts of Speech are explained in a Manner easy and intelligible to young Beginners. The Conjugation of Verbs (one of the most intricate Parts of the Castilian Language) is laid down in the most plain Manner, to each of which is added that of the Passive, Reciprocal, Impersonal, and other irregular Verbs. I have also inserted two Tables, by which the Learned will, at first view, see the Difference between the three Conjugations.

The Curious will herein find all that is requisite and necessary, to lead them into the perfect Knowledge of the Castilian (commonly called the Spanish Tongue) which has been preserved in those Provinces, in a greater Purity and Perfection, than in any other of the more distant ones from the Court: This was the Reason that induced King Don Alonzo the Wise to order that all publick Writings, &c. should be made in the Castilian Tongue. I have laid down some fixt Rules in the Rudiments, to avoid ambiguity in the Pronuntiation of the Letters B, V, &c. erroneously used before, even among the Spaniards. The Vocabulary, Familiar Pbrases, and the Colloquies are carefully amended; and all the Words are accented to avoid Mistakes in the Pronunciation.

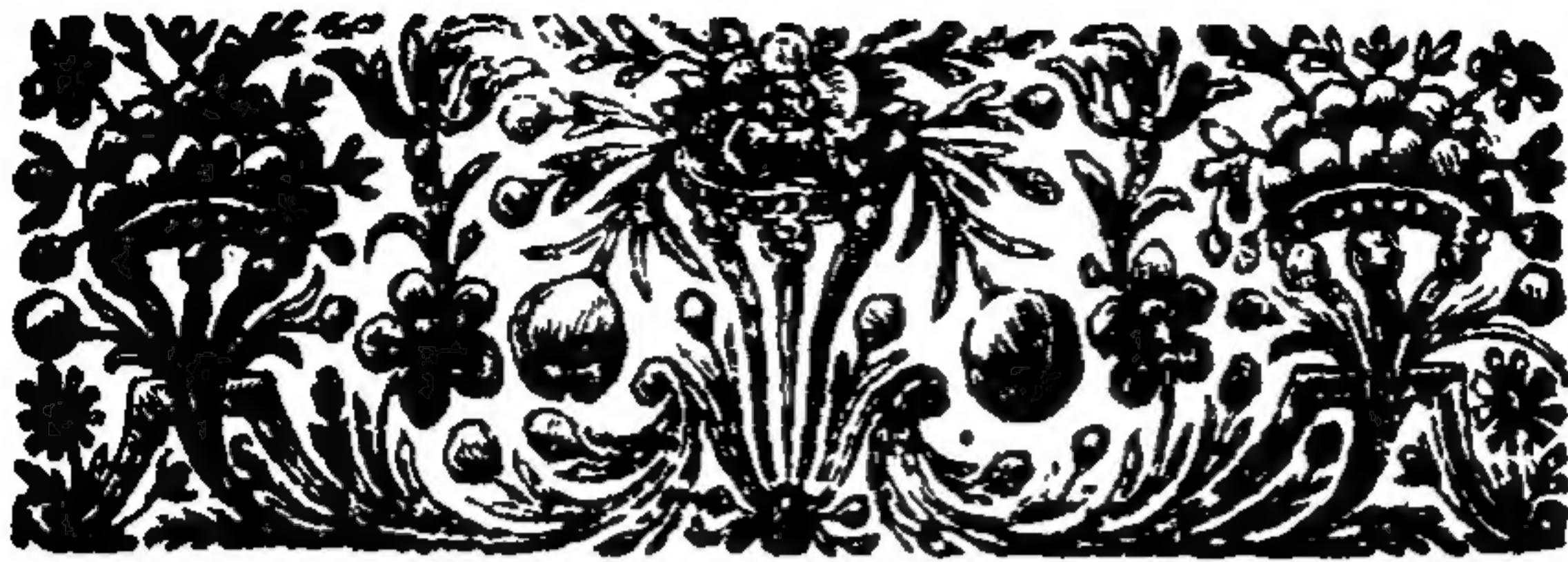
It was high Time (nay there was an absolute necessity) to make a new Edition of the Spanish Grammar: For all Languages alter by Time and Custom; and the Castilian has received so many Alterations, that no-body can pretend to teach it, or learn it in Perfection, as it is spoken at Court, and used by modern Authors, without some new Instructions. The *ç*,
(called

The P R E F A C E.

(called cedilla) which was so much in use before, is now left off, and the Reasons for it the Reader will find in my Observations on that Letter, and the z is substituted in its Place. The y, which commonly passed as a Vowel, is now a Consonant in Composition. Some of the Spanish Words are softened, and others altered, as more conformable to the Latin; as instead of Coraçón we say Corazón: for vezes, dezir, hazér; véces, decir, hacér: instead of estoy, doy, Reyno; estói, dói, Réino: for dava, iva, devo, escrivo; dába, íba, débo, escribo: for Cavállo, Govierno; Cabállo, Gobiérno: for abuelo or aguelo; avuélo: hái for ay or hay: Ahí for aí or haí, &c. I have followed, in the Correction of this Grammar, the Dictionary lately published by the Royal Academy of Madrid, which is the only Standard for all those who aim at Speaking and Writing correctly and elegantly the Spanish Language.



A N E W,



THE
RUDIMENTS
OF THE
Spanish Grammar.

A S there are many who study the CASTILIAN language, without understanding before-hand what Grammar is, and that every body may have certain rules for his guide, I think it may not be useless to make an epitome of it and its parts.

GRAMMAR is the art of speaking and writing properly. And is divided into four parts, *viz.*

ORTHOGRAPHY, or the method of true writing.
ETYMOLOGY, or the knowledge of the original words.

SYNTAX, or the manner of forming the words into sentences.

PROSODY, or the knowledge of the accent or quantity of the syllables, as to their being pronounced long or short.

P A R T I.

Of ORTHOGRAPHY,

Which contains some very curious and necessary observations to learn the Castilian tongue in perfection.

C H A P. I.

Of the Letters in general.

THE Spanish language has not a peculiar alphabet of it's own, tho' it is not disputable, but that before the conquest of *Spain* by the *Romans*, the *Spaniards* had characters or letters to express their language in, and that the *Gotbs* also introduced theirs. But there is no memorial of the former, and the *Gotbic* ceased in the year 1091 by decree of the national council at *Leon*, in the reign of Don *Alonso VI.* in which it was appointed that no characters should be used besides that of the *Roman*: Ever since which time they have continued the *Latin* letters ; with the addition of a few borrowed from the *Greek*, in order to own their debt for such words as they took from that language, and these are *cb*, *k*, *pb*, *tb*, *y*, correspondent to *χ*, *κ*, *φ*, *Ϛ*, and *υ*.

The *Castilian* alphabet consists of twenty-six letters, including the *b*: the twenty-three following are common to other languages.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q,
R, S, T, U, X, Y, Z.

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s,
t, u, x, y, z.

And

And the other three letters *ç*, *j*, *ñ*, for their different pronunciation are peculiar to the *Castilian* language.

Of the common, these five are vowels *A*, *E*, *I*, *O*, *U*, to which the *Y* is added for the Greek words, so called from their expressing a sound without the help of any other letter. The rest are consonants, so called from their having no sound alone, and are regularly divided into *mutes* and *semi-vowels*; or, as others say, into *natural* and *confus'd*: the *mutes* or *natural* are *B*, *C*, *D*, *G*, *K*, *P*, *Q*, *T*, *Z*, and the *semi-vowels* or *confused* are *F*, *H*, *L*, *M*, *N*, *R*, *S*, *X*, so called for their being pronounced with a vowel before and after it.

Of which *L*, *M*, *N*, *R*, *S*, are liquids: *ç*, *j*, *ñ*, *v*, and *y*, are likewise consonants in the *Spanish* language.

Of the pronunciation of the letters.

A Letter is nothing more (in the sense we speak here) than *a note of a peculiar sound, and an individual part of a syllable.*

Letters are (as some authors affirm) in comparison to the languages what notes are to Musick. If from the notes may be formed various and innumerable tones, whose sweet and pleasant harmony cherish, and with sounding eloquence persuades; so are the concerts of words infinite, which result from the letters, whose composition with an eloquent melody describes to us the thoughts, and brings the invisible to life: both as written, speak to the eyes, and as pronounced, to the hearing. And if nobody without the perfect knowledge of notes can boast of being a Musician; less can any one presume to know with delicacy a language without a full knowledge of the letters.

4 *The RUDIMENT'S of*

For which reason, and as in the order of nature, the simple is first, and then the compound, it appears proper to begin by the vowels, whose sound is so simple as to be formed only by opening the mouth.

Of the vowels.

A a

IS pronounced as in *English*, *aw*, as in the words *all*, *ball*, *call*, *ball*: without differing from the manner in which it is pronounced by other nations.

E e

Is pronounced the same as in the *Latin*, *Italian*, and *French* tongues, nay even the same as in the English in the words *to bless*, *to send*.

Tho' *e* be doubled it never loses its pronunciation, so that when there are two *ee* in a word, both are plainly and distinctly pronounced, as *creér*, to believe; *leér*, to read.

I. Y.

These letters are called *i* *Latin*, and *y* *Greek*: the former preserves it's natural pronunciation in composition, and is pronounced by all nations, as in these words, *visible*, *vision*, *terrible*: the latter has the same pronunciation; but when in composition is a consonant, and is pronounced as two *ii*, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast.

Of *j* called *i jota*. See letter *G*.

O

Has the same pronunciation as in *Latin* and *English*, in these words *thróno*, throne; *obediente*, obedient.

U.

U. V.

The *Spanish* language has two *u*'s as well as the *Latin*; *u* vowel called by the *Spaniards* an open or square *u*; and *v* consonant called *v* close, or *de Corazoncillo*, which always goes before the vowels, and is never joined to a consonant, nor ends any word. *U* vowel is pronounced as double *oo* in *English*, and these words *Cupido* a *Cupid*, *Cúra* a Curate or a Cure, are pronounced as if they were written thus *Coopido*, *coora*; because the pronunciation of the words book *libro*, cook *cozinero*, is exactly the same as that of the *u* vowel in *Spanish*.

V consonant is pronounced by the *Spaniards* in the same manner as the *u* vowel; tho' there are some authors who pretend to say, that it's pronunciation is a sound between that of *b* and *u*, but I see no manner of ground for this exception.

Observations upon the vowels.

A.

THIS letter has often the masculine accent, as *amará*, he will love; *bará*, he will do it; and the feminine, as *amára*, when I might love, in the last syllable. There are four diphthongs formed of this vowel when it goes before other vowels, as we shall shew hereafter.

A when by itself, stands for a preposition which denotes the dative case, as *dóí la preferéncia à Pédro*, I give the preference to Peter; it governs also the accusative, as *yo ámo à Dios*, I love God; denotes the part or place where one goes, as *vóí à Róma*, I go to Rome, it also precedes the accusative when before an infinitive governed by another verb, as *vámos à cenár*,

6 *The RUDIMENTS of*
cenár, let us go to supper ; *à passeár*, to walk ; *à jugár*, to play.

When before the adverbs or adverbial moods it denotes the manner in which an action is executed, as *à sabiéndas*, knowingly ; *à trúeco*, by changing ; rather purposely, *à brázo partido*, upon equal terms : *à* denotes likewise when a thing is to be done, as *à las doce del día*, at noon.

It is often an interjection, as *à señór fuláno*, ho there such a one ; *à señór Pédro*, ho there Peter.

It is taken for *con*, with, as *castígue se el oficíal à féná capitál*, let the officer be punished with a capital punishment.

For *bácia*, towards, as *volvió la cabéza à tal parte*, he turned his head towards such a place.

For *pára*, for, as *conduce à éste fin*, it is proper for this end.

For *por*, by, as *à fuérza ganó la cuidad*, by force he gained the city.

For *según*, according, as *à la móda de Francia*, according to the French fashion.

For *si*, if, as *à saber esto*, if I knew this—, upon knowing of this.

For *sino*, if not, unless, as *à no venir à tiémpo*, if he should not come in time, &c.

For *en*, in, as *à vista de tal procedér que quiere que bága* ? upon sight of such proceeding what will you have me to do ?

And tho' there are many authors who are of opinion, that *à* stands for the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *bavér*, to have, saying *aqueíl á*, I say that then it is to be written with an *b* thus *aqueíl bá*, observing the same in all the tenses and moods ; for *bavér* is derived from the *Latin* verb *babere*, and regard being had to this there will happen no mistake or equivocation.

There are other authors who assert, that *à* stands for *bái*, there is, which is absolutely false ; for in the speeches which denote time, as *à un año que víne à Lóndres*,

Lóndres, it is a year since I came to London, à must be written with *b* thus *bá* abbreviated, or by the figure Apocope, because then it is the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *bacér*, to do, and is the same as *báce un año que vine à Lóndres*, according to the rule.

Apocope demit finem, quem dat Paragoge.

But of these we shall speak more at large in another place.

E.

E either is masculine, as in the last syllable of *amaré*, I shall love; *aprenderé*, I will learn; *enseñé*, I have taught; *oiré*, I shall hear, &c. or feminine, as *quándo amáre*, when I shall love; *quándo olvidáre*, when I shall forget; and it is so because the accent is not acute in these last examples.

Of the *è*, when before other vowels, may be formed four diphthongs.

E is sometimes used as a first person of the verb *bavér*, but then it must be written with *b*, saying *yo be comprádo un anillo de óro*, I have bought a gold ring.

It is often a conjunction, and is used instead of *y*, when the following word begins with *i* vowel, as *los Holandéses è Ingléses*, the Dutch and the English *Espáña è Itália*, Spain and Italy.

Poets often take the liberty to add the letter *e* at the end of some words using the figure Paragoge, saying *amóre* for *amór*, love, and this they do for the sake of the rhyme.

E is sometimes an interjection, but then *b* must be added to it, as *bé*, *que dices?* ha! what do you say? *bé, que quierés?* ha! what you will have? it stands likewise for an adverb, as *b*i**, *la mugér*, see! the woman.

I. Y.

The *Latin i* stands for a vowel in the *Spanish* language, and the *y* for a consonant ; but when a strong aspiration is required in the pronunciation, then *j* serves as a consonant, as *yá*, already ; *justo*, just.

When the accent is laid on the *i* as *lcí*, *ví*, then it has a masculine pronunciation, and when not, a feminine one.

There are four diphthongs also formed from this vowel.

When *y* is by itself in a speech, it is generally a conjunction copulative, and sometimes suspensive, as *Juán y Pedro*, *y býen*, *y córren*, *y peléan*, John and Peter, fly, run, and fight : But it must be observed, that when the following word begins with *i*, then by Euphonia è must be made use of instead of *y*, as *los Espanóles è Italianos*, *Francéses è Ingleses*, the Spaniards and the Italian, the French and the English.

I or *y* are sometimes put instead of *abi*, there, but as this use is merely voluntary it must be never used.

O.

This letter is also pronounced sometimes with a masculine accent, as *amó*, he loved ; *respondió*, he answered.

Four diphthongs are formed of this letter, when it precedes other vowels.

When the *o* is by itself in a speech, it is often a conjunction disjunctive, as *ò sálio*, *ò ignorante*, *ò brávo*, *ò covarde*, *ba de venir*, *con mígo*, let him be wise, or ignorant, or brave, or a coward, he must come with me.

It is likewise an interjection, as *ò maldad !* *ò dolor !* O wickedness ! O pain ! but of this we shall speak more largely in another place.

As an adverb, as *ò si yo fuéra rico*, O that I were rich. *U is*

U.

U is sometimes pronounced with a masculine accent, as *tú*, *sú*, thou, his ; of it are likewise made four diphthongs.

When after a *g*, *u* is joined to *e* or *i*, then *u* loses its pronunciation ; and these words, *Guedéja*, a lock of hair ; *guía* a guide, are pronounced as in the English words of giddy, Guinea, or as in the French words *guerre*, war ; *guerir*, to cure. *Aguero*, an omen ; *verguénza*, shame, &c. are excepted.

When it is by itself in a speech, then it is a conjunction, or interjection, instead of *o*, when the word following begins with an *o*, as *impedimento* is *obstáculo*, impediment or obstacle.

Of the pronunciation of the Consonants.

B. b.

THIS letter is pronounced as in other languages, closing the lips, and as if it had an *e* after it, as in the English word *Bay*.

As to the letter *b*, its difference, and similitude of pronunciation with the letter *v*, we must refer the reader to the 2d chapter as to its proper place.

C, *ç*, Z.

C when before the letters *e i* is pronounced softer than *s*, as *cédro*, a cedar tree ; *ciélo*, heaven : when before the vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced as *k*, as *cára*, the face ; *comér*, to eat ; *cúrda*, a cord or rope.

When *b* follows the letter *c*, it is pronounced as in the English cheese, *quéso* ; child, *níño níña* ; thus are *cbánza*, a jest ; *cbocoláte*, chocolate ; *cbíco*, little, small ; *múcbo*, much : these words excepted *cbaridád*, charity ; *cbóro*, a choir ; *Archángel*, an Archangel, &c. which are

are derived from the *Latin* *charitas*, *chorus*, *archangelus*, for *c* then is pronounced as *k*.

Upon the *Cedilla* formed with a small dash under it, I think it convenient to observe; first, that as by a resolution newly taken by the members of the Royal Academy at *Madrid*, the *ç* had been only invented to supply the defect of combination of *ce*, *ci*, in the three vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, in order to pronounce *ça*, *ço*, *çu*, instead of *ca*, *co*, *cu*; and this having taken place, and with the same softness as the *z*; the *ç* is reputed at present as superfluous; and the reason is, because *ç*, in the opinion of several authors, is not a different letter from the *z*, but the same differently formed, this being the reason why many authors have used both promiscuously, for their pronunciation are very much alike in these words, *çapata*ré, *ozar*atéro, a shoe-maker; *cáça*, *cáza*, hunting, &c. Besides, because *ç* is not found in the mother tongues, and the *z* is; further the *z* is a general letter in the beginning, middle, and ending of any word, which cannot be said of the letter *ç*, for which reason, it often cannot be used in the middle of a word, and in the end never; no body having written as yet *almirantáçgo*, admiralty; *balláçgo*, a reward for a thing lost; *meresco*, I deserve; *padeçco*, I do suffer; *desliç*, a slipping; *luç*, light; *paç*, peace; *veloc*, swift. Wherefore I am of opinion that *ç* is superfluous in the *Spanish* language, and as such it's use must be avoided, placing the *z* in it's stead in every word where *ç* used to be.

But as *ç* is found in most of the *Spanish* authors, I think it proper to acquaint the curious, that it's pronunciation is the same as that of *c* when before the vowels *e* *i*; because, as has been said, *ç* was invented to supply the combination in the vowels, *a*, *o*, *u*. And tho' a certain rule might be given to keep both the *ç* and the *z* in the said language, which is, to use the *ç* when a consonant precedes, as *elabânça*, a praise; *enseñança*, instruction, teaching, &c,

&c. and to use *z* when a vowel goes before, and in the beginning and end of words, as *alteza*, highness; *razón*, reason; *zélo*, zeal; *luz*, light, &c. but as the foregoing opinion is better grounded, I think it more right to take away the *ç* and to use the *z*, as the modern authors do, whom I follow. *Z* is pronounced as the *English* pronounce the double *ff*.

D. d.

D has the same sound in *Spanish*, as in the *Latin* and other languages. And although there are several authors who are of opinion that *d* is not to be pronounced when at the end of a word, yet I am of a contrary opinion, and say that it always is to be pronounced if it is written, with this difference only, that when it ends a word, its sound is softer, laying the accent on the preceding vowel, as *amistad*, friendship; *bondad*, goodness, &c.

F f

Does not differ in its sound from that of the *Latin*, or of other languages; but it must be observed, that the *Spaniards* never use *ff* in their writings, as will be said afterwards, and if some do double them it is by way of a voluntary affectation. A certain author takes notice, that the *Spaniards* confound *f* with *pb*, or, to speak more proper, they use *f* instead of *pb*; I don't doubt but that in every nation there are ignorant people, but those who are skilled in Orthography ought to conform to the manner in which words are written in the original.

G. g. J. X.

G is only guttural before the vowels *e*, *i*, but *j* and *x* are always aspired, or guttural letters in the whole combination of the vowels, because in the same

same manner is pronounced *ja, je, ji, jo, ju*, as *xa, xe, &c.* *x* is not guttural in some words derived from the *Latin*, as *eximír*, to exempt; *exámen*, examination, &c. as it will be said in the 2d chapter, and when it goes before a consonant, as *excedér*, to exceed; *excitár*, to excite; *excluir*, to exclude; *excremén to*, excrement, &c.

G before the vowels *a, o, u*, is not aspired or guttural, and is pronounced as in other languages, as *gállo*, a cock; *gólpe*, a blow; *gústo*, taste, pleasure. I cannot agree with some authors, who say, that when *g* comes before *n* it is sunk in the pronunciation, because the men of learning in *Spain* generally pronounce it, as in *Ignácio*, Ignatius; *ignorár*, to be ignorant; *ignóto*, unknown; *magnánimo*, magnanimous; *magnífico*, magnificent, &c.

H.

Jórdan, Martinianus, Tominque, in his *Elench. Elem. P. II Art. III. Littleton* in his *Latin Dictionary* lett. *H*, and other authors are of opinion that *H* (called by *St Jerom* an extensive vowel) is a letter for the following reasons.

First, a Letter is nothing else than *a note of a peculiar sound, and a single part of a syllable*; *h* is the same: therefore the *b* is a letter.

Secondly, The *b* comes originally from the *Hebrew* and *Greek* tongues; it was a letter with them: why then should it not be the same in the living languages? &c.

The *Spanish* authors place the *b* among the semi-vowels, because before and after it has a vowel in its pronunciation. See the abovesaid authors. But as the public has received the *b* with *Priscianus* as a note of aspiration and not as a letter, we must conform to it whether with reason or without it. *H* is generally pronounced so gently, that in many words it can scarce be perceived, as *hómbre*, a man; *bumilde*, humble;

humble ; but when *ue* follows *b*, then *bu* is pronounced as the *English w* ; *búerta*, a garden ; *buésped*, an host or guest ; *buéijo*, a bone : like *wértá*, *wésped*, *wéijo*.

H after *c* is pronounced as in *English*, *church*, *much*, *iglésia*, *múcho*. Although some authors observe, that the *Spaniards* very rarely use the *b* after *p* and *t*, I say, that the *Spanish* tongue does not allow them the liberty to do it, and thus the learned must conform themselves to the etymology of words, saying *Thomás*, Thomas ; *Theología*, Theology or Divinity ; *Pbilosofía*, Philosophy.

K.

The *Spaniards* make use of this letter only in conformity to the etymology of the words derived from other languages, as *Kalendário*, a Kalendar ; *Kalendas*, Kalends, the first day of the month, *Kyrie eleison*, &c. Greek ; and in proper names of cities, towns, &c. at *Kelmo*, *Kenard*, *Kunigunda*, &c. Saxon.

L. l.

Besides the single *l*, there is a double *ll* in *Spanish* language as in the *Latin*, but differently pronounced : the single one is pronounced as in other languages, but the double *ll* as in the *Italian* *gl* in the words *Figli*, *Moglie*, &c. or as the double *ll* in *French* in the words *coquille*, *filles*, &c. which sounds as if an *i* was after the first *l*, as of *lláve*, a key ; *llovér*, to rain ; *callár*, to be silent, read *lláve*, *llovér*, *callár*. *L* is never doubled in the end of words.

It must be observed, that all words that have a doule *l* in the *Latin*, are written in *Spanish* with a single one.

M.

M is pronounced as in other languages, as *mán*, a hand ; *camino*, a way ; *mádre*, mother, &c. in what manner 'tis to be doubled, or when it is to be kept single

N.

There are two *n*'s in the *Spanish* language, one which is common to all languages, and is pronounced alike with them ; another proper and peculiar to the *Spanish*, written thus *ñ*, which is equivalent to two *n n*, and is called *n con tilde*, and is pronounced as *gn* in *Italian* and *French*, or, as if it had an *i* after *n*, as in these words, *áño*, a year ; *níño*, a child ; *montaña*, a mountain ; saying thus, *agno* or *anio*, *nigno* or *ninio*, &c.

P.

There is nothing to be observed in the letter *p*, but that its pronunciation is the same as in *Latin*, as *pán*, bread ; *Pédro*, Peter.

Pb are used as *f*, and pronounced in the same manner ; but that in writing *f* ought to be used for *pb* is an insupportable error : because with *pb* and not with *f* are to be written the following words, *Pbilósopbo*, a Philosopher ; *Pbyfico*, a Physician ; *Pbysiología*, Philosophy, &c.

The *Latin p* is often changed into *b*, as of *recipere*, *recebir*, to receive ; but of this we shall speak hereafter.

Q.

U always follows this letter as in other languages, and is pronounced in the same manner. When *ui* follows after *q*, then it is pronounced as if there was a *k* instead of *qu*, saying *quinto*, *kinto*, fifth, *quince*, *kince*, fifteen ; but when it follows *ua* or *ue*, the *u* is pronounced, tho' not strong, as *questión*, a question ; *consequéncia*, a consequence ; *quátro*, four, &c. the following are excepted, *tóque*, let him touch or ring ;

ring ; *repique*, let him ring out ; *líquido*, liquid ; *que*, that ; *querér*, to be willing ; *quién*, who ; which are pronounced as if they were written with *k*.

R

No way differs in its sound from the *Latin* and *English* ; but it must be observed, that at the beginning of words it is pronounced stronger than at the middle and end, because the initial *r* is equal to two *r r*, which always are pronounced with vehemence.

S.

S simple, as well as compound, is pronounced as in *Latin* : *cum amasse sanlos*, *como amásse los santos*, when I could love the saints ; *ò altissimo Dios*, O most high God : from whence it may be inferred, that all the preterimperfects of the optative, and the superlatives, are written and accented as in the *Latin*.

S in the *Spanish* is doubled in words derived from the *Latin*, of which we shall give sufficient notice in its place, but never is doubled at the end of words ; and when they begin in the *Latin* with *s* to which follows a consonant as *c, m, p, t*, then is added an *e*, as from *scholasticus* say *escolástico* ; *scribere*, *escribir* ; *smaragdus*, *esmerálida* ; *spina*, *espina* ; *spiritus*, *espiritu*.

T.

This letter is pronounced as in *Latin*, in the combination of all the vowels, as *Tácito*, *Tacto*, *tenaz*, &c. still or quiet, the sense of feeling, tenacious, in the middle of several words *t* is changed into *c*, and especially in words ending in *tia* and *tio*, as from *beneficentia* say *beneficéncia*, from *essentia*, *esséncia* ; *justicia*, *justícia*, &c. beneficence, essence, justice.

There

There is no double *t* in the *Spanish* language.

When the original words have *tb*, they are to be written in the same manner in the *Spanish*; as *Cátbendra*, *Catbólico*, *Matbéo*, *Tbología*, pronouncing the *tb* as a single *t*.

X.

This is a guttural letter. Vid. Let. *G*.

I do only observe here, that all the *Spanish* words that begin with *x* are *Arabick*, except the following that come from the *Greek*, *Xantbénia*, a precious stone like amber in its colour; *Xánto*, a precious stone of a very yellow colour; *Xeníolo*, a small gift; *Xenodócbio*, an hospice, or an inn for strangers; *Xenón*, an habitation, a dwelling-place, a lodging; *Xenopárocbos*, officers appointed to provide for the Ambassadors; *Xyrotbéca*, the case wherein the Barbers put their razors and scissars; *Xysto*, a gallery, a summer-house, or an open place to take the air about a garden.

Y. Vid. Let. *I*.

Z. Vid. Let. *C*.

C H A P. II.

Of the letters when in composition.

TH E only and sure rule to reduce the *Castilian* language in perfection, is to write it as it is spoke, and really pronounced; it is by this only that it is distinguished, and exceeds all other languages, not excepting the *Latin*; I have said the *Latin*, because that language joins the diphthongs, pronouncing only one letter, when they are wrote with two as *Celum* is pronounced *Celum*: but the *Castilian*

Castellan pronounces its diphthongs in such a manner, that without losing a letter it preserves the sound of both vowels in one syllable, as *alcáide*, *áire*, *réy*, *léy*, *buéy*, &c. this being agreeable to the sense which the Antients gave of the word *diphthong*, defining it thus: *Diphthongus est duarum in una syllaba vocalium sonus perceptus*, a diphthong is the distinct sound of two vowels in one syllable; for which reason I am of opinion, that the Antients pronounced *Latin* in the same manner that the *Spanish* is now pronounced; and if it was not foreign to my present purpose, I would prove clearly the time when and how the *Latin* pronunciation has been corrupted, and by what means the synecresis in the diphthongs was introduced, but as this suffices for the present, I shall proceed in my design.

In order to form the Orthography, it is necessary to observe the modifications by which time has smoothed the roughness of words, and reduced them to the modern stile and manner of discourse: But as there are many, who manage the *Castilian* tongue in proportion to their genius, confounding letters together in their pronunciation, and using the consonants at their pleasure; to avoid such abuse it is proper to know,

That the springs from whence flow such variety and confusion in the Orthography are the following. First, the similitude of the pronunciation of some letters, whose use is so uncertain, that they are often mixed, and by the meer pronunciation it is difficult to distinguish their proper use: such are the *B* and *V* consonant, the *C* and the *Z* in the proper combinations, and in those of the *C*, in the two vowels *e* and *i*, the *G*, *J*, and *X* in the two vowels *e*, *i*, the *J* and *X* in their entire combinations; the *C* and the *Q*, and the *G* and *H*, in the combinations where the *x* interposes. Secondly, the use of the double consonants, which are commonly found in compound words, as *acceſſión*, *immortál*, *annotár*,

18 *The RUDIMENT'S of arreglár, dissimulár, &c.* Thirdly, the use of many consonants which come together in various words, as *assumpto, sanctidád, demonstración, redempción, &c.* This being supposed.

I say, first, that the *B* ought not to be pronounced and written instead of the *V*, nor the *V* be confounded with the *B*; since every one knows that they are different letters, and therefore it is absolutely necessary that their sound should be likewise different. To surmount this difficulty, regard must be had to the original from whence proceed the words in which these letters are found, because if they are derived from a word written with a *B*, as *Baculus, Beatus, Beneficium, bibere, bonus, &c.* they must be written with a *B*; and if from a word written with a *V*, they must be wrote so; as *Vácuo, valér, vánو, vapór, vendér, venir, vida, &c.* which are derived from the Latin *vacuus, valere, vapor, vendere, venire, vita*.

For which reason all the preterimperfects of the indicative mood must be wrote with *B*, and not with *V*, as is usual, saying, *amába, cantába, bablába, orába*, because they come from the Latin *amabam, cantabam, loquebar, orabam*.

It must be observed likewise, that when in the original of a word there is a *P*, then the *B* must be used and not the *V*, because from *caput, concipere, lupus, sapiens, &c.* comes *cábéza, concebir, lóbo, sábio*.

Before the letters *L* and *R*, the *B* must always be put and not the *V*, saying *amáble, dáble, dóble, báblar, abrír, brávo, Hómbre, Póbre*.

Therefore that barbarous distinction ought to be avoided which ignorance has introduced, *viz.* that there must not be two *BB's* or two *VV's* in one word; because, if they are in the root they ought to be used, as in *Bárba, Bebér, Bárbaro, vivucidád, vivír, viviente, volvér, &c.*

And when the original of words is doubtful, I am of opinion that we ought to use the *B*, and not the *V*, the pronunciation of the first being more agreeable to our manner of speaking than that of the second.

I say, 2dly, that the *f* called *cedilla*, is now superfluous in the *Spanish* tongue, and therefore the *Z* ought to be used in its stead, in all words whatsoever, as was said in chap. i. Lett. C.

But it ought to be taken notice of, that the words ending in *Z* which are derived from the *Latin*, ought to change the *Z* into *C* in the plural, because it is so found in the original, and thus *feliz*, *luz*, *páz*, *véz*, *vóz*, make in the plural *felices*, *lúces*, *páces*, *véces*, *vóces*.

Hitherto has been written *bazér*, *dezír*, but these verbs being derived from *facere* and *dicere*, now the *Z* is changed into *C*, conformable to the original, and now we say *bacér*, *decír*, observing the same rule in all their derivatives.

I say, 3dly, that *G* being guttural only before the *e* and *i*, it ought to be used only in the primitives and derivatives, such are *afligír*, *cogér*, *colegír*, *elegír*, *protegér*, *regír*, &c. writing *aflige*, *cóge*, *colige*, *elíge*, *protége*, *ríge*, without being extended to the derivatives of *j* and *x*.

When the infinitives in *gér* or *gír* change *ér* or *ír* into *a* or *o* as in the present, then the *G* is changed into *j*, that the true pronunciation of the infinitive may be preserved; and thus from *finír* say *finjo*, *finja*, from *Regír*, *Ríjo*, *Ríja*, &c.

All words which in their original have *g*, *i*, or *l*, are written with *j* and not with *x*, as from *longe* say *lejos* from *Tagus*, *Tájo*; from *tegula*, *téja*; *jactantia*, *jaetáncia*; *jaspis*, *jáspé*; *jurare*, *jurár*; *justitia*, *justícia*; *juvenis*, *jóven*; from *consilium*, *consejo*; *Filius*, *Hijo*; *melior*, *mejór*, in all the combination of the vowels; and when the infinitives end in *jar*, the *j* must be kept in all the tenses without exception.

In these words *Magestád*, *Mugér*, *Tráge*, &c. common use has prevailed in keeping the *g* instead of the *j*.

If the words have *x* in their original, as *Texér*, *exémplo*, *execución*, *perpléxo*, *vexiga*, &c. it would appear ridiculous to write them with *j*, and not with *x*; and it must be likewise observed, that when the words have the letter *s* in their original, as *cáxa*, *dexár*, *xabón*, *xémé*, *xúgo*, &c. derived from *capsa*, *deserere*, *sapo*, *semipes*, *succus*, are to be written always with *x* and not with *j*; and the reason of it is, because the *s* has the sound somewhat like the *x*, and as the Spaniards do take the guttural pronunciation from the *Arabians*, and they pronounce the double *ff* as *x*, it cannot be absurd to change *s* into *x*.

Nouns ending in *x*, as *Bóx*, *Baláx*, *Relóx*, &c. keep the *x* in the plural; as well as all the verbs, which have *x* in the infinitive mood are to keep it in all the tenses, as from *baxár*, *dexár*, &c. say *báxo*, *baxába*, *Baxé*. &c.

Q is frequently in vulgar writings changed into *C*, but the true rule is to be guided by the original *Latin*: otherwise the derivation is obscured, and the pronunciation corrupted; from *C* are formed *cuájo*, *cuénta*, *cuérda*, &c. and from *Q* *quál*, *queñón*, *quátro*, &c.

It is an impropriety, that many fall into of using *u* and *i* vowels instead of *y* and *v* consonants: but this irregularity is cautiously avoided by all correct writers, and exploded by the *Spanish Academy*; having established the letter *y* to be always a consonant in the *Spanish* words, and the accent is always laid on the annexed vowel, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast; *arróyo*, a rivulet, or a brook. It must be likewise avoided to put the *y* immediately before or after a consonant, or at the end of a verb or word, except the following *Léy*, *Réy*, *Buéy*, &c.

The Spaniards, to retain the softness of the sound of the *Latin* consonant *j*, for want of an exact equivalent, change it into *y* consonant, as in *adjuvare*, *jejunare*, *jacere*, which the Spaniards make *ayudár*, *ayunár*, *yacér*: and in conformity to the *Greek*, in words borrowed from that language, they preserve it as a vowel, Σύμβολον, Μυσίειον, ἈΞΥΜΩΝ, Μαρτύρ. *Symbolo*, *Mystério*, *ázymo*, *Mártyr*. So likewise in the third conjugation of verbs, as *argúyo*, *argúyes*, *argúye*, I dispute, &c. but in the imperfect say thus: *arguía*, &c. the accent being to be put on the vowels and never on consonants, the same is the first person of the preterpect, as *arguí*, I disputed, &c. the Spaniards likewise say at present, *dói*, I give; *estói*, I am; *bói*, to day, &c.

C H A P. III.

Of the use of letters doubled.

E and **O** are often doubled in *Spanish*, to come the nearer to the radical pronunciation, as *Acree-dór*, *Creér*, *Leér*, *Cooperár*, *Loór*: in which both the vowels are pronounced distinctly. And it is on the contrary, wrong in some, who superfluously add *e* in words derived from the *Latin*, as in *Fee*, *Veer*, instead of *Fé*, *Vér*.

As to consonants, the variety is great, but to avoid all affectation, and speak properly it is to be observed, that *C* is never to be doubled before the vowels *A*, *O*, *U*, or before consonants, and we therefore write *Acaécer*, *Acomodár*, *Ocáso*, *Ocasión*, *Acusár*, *Acumulár*, *Aclamár*, &c. But before the vowels *E* and *I*, *C* is doubled in such words as are derived from the *Latin*, and had them originally, as *Accelerár*, *Accésto*, *Accénto*, *Occidénte*, except the following words *Aceptár* and *Sucedér*,

because altho' in their original they have two *cc*, they are not specified in the pronunciation by the Spaniards.

Latin words terminating in *ctio*, change the *t* into *C*, as *Acción*, *Cocción*, *Dicción*, *Lección*, *Producción*. And if either of these two *C*'s were omitted, the derivation would be the less evident.

M and not *N* is always to be made use of before *B*, *M*, *P*, as *Ambiente*, *immortal*, *império*.

Words compounded of the *Latin* prepositions *In* and *Con*, follow the *Latin* rule of turning *In* into *Im*, and *Con* into *Com*, as *Immaculado*, *Immediato*, *Immemoriál*, *Immortal*, &c. *Commensurár*, *Commovér*, *Commutár*, &c. In all which words the *M* is doubled, tho' in several other common words one *M* is lost, as *Comércio*, *Común*, *comunión*, &c. Some change *Im* into *Em*, as *Emmascarádo*, *emmagrecér*, *Emmudecér*, &c.

N is likewise doubled in several words compounded with *An*, *En*, *In*, *Con*, as *Annexión*, *Annotár*, *Connaturál*, *Connexión*, *Ennegrecér*, *Ennoblecér*, *Innáto*, *Innocénte*, *Innovár*, &c. except *Anulár*, *Anunciár*, *Anillo*, &c.

The letter *R* is doubled in the words that have a strong pronunciation in the middle; as *Abórre*, *Bórra*, *Errór*, *Guérра*, *Pérro*, &c. Those words that have one *r* in the middle are pronounced softly, as *ára*, an altar; *aréna*, sand; *íra*, wrath. There is no word in the *Spanish* language that begins or ends with two *rr*, but the initial *R* has always a strong sound, as *rábia*, rage; *razón*, reason; *reclór*, rector; *reñír*, to quartel, &c. it must be observed, that when any consonant precedes the *R*, then *R* is never doubled, and it would look but barbarous to write these words with two *rr*, *bórra*, honour; *bonró*, honourable; *enriquecér*, to grow rich, &c. because the preceding consonant makes the pronunciation strong, so that the *r* is only to be doubled when between two vowels, as *tierra*, earth; *errór*, an error.

S is to be doubled in the words that have two *ff* in their original, as *assár*, to roast; *cessár*, to cease; *esséncia*, essence; *necessidád*, necessity; the same is to be observed in the second preterimperfect of the subjunctive mood, as *amáffe*, I might love; *enseñáffe*, I might teach; *buviéffe*, I might have: in all the superlatives, as *amantíssimo*, most loving; *beatíssimo*, most holy, most happy; *doctíssimo*, most learned; and in adverbs superlatives, as *doctíssimamente*, wisely; so are the words *acesso*, access; *congréffo*, congress; *excesso*, excess; *progréffo*, progress; and all the compounds of simple words that begin with *s*, as of *saltár*, to jump, comes *assaltár*, to assault; of *sentír*, to be sensible, or to feel, comes *assentír*, to assent, of *susto*, fright, comes *assustár*, to frighten.

The two *l l*, which in *Spanish* have a peculiar pronunciation, are doubled before the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, when in Latin *c*, *f*, *p*, &c. precedes *l*, as *lláno*, plain; *llánto*, crying, grief; *lláve*, a key; *lláma*, flame; *lléno*, full; *llorár*, to cry; *llovér*, to rain; *lluvia*, rain; as it will be said at large in the treating of the formation of the *Spanish* words from the *Latin*, which will be put at the end of this Grammar.

The said consonants only are to be doubled in the *Spanish* tongue, because no body now pronounces two *bb*, two *dd*, two *ff*, two *gg*, two Latin *ll*, two *pp*, two *tt*, nor double *w*. This is the method newly taken of the Royal Academy of *Madrid*, and this is that which the modern authors follow.

C H A P. IV.

Of the rules that are to be observed upon the concurrence of divers consonants.

FROM two to four are the consonants, which occur together between two vowels, of which there is some diversity in writing, which varies from the manner in which they are pronounced, and are *BST*, *BSTR*; *CT*, *CTR*; *MPC*, *MPT*; *NCT*, *NSC*, *NSCR*, *NSP*, *NST*, *NSTR*; *SC*; *XC*, *XCL*, *XPL*, *XPR*, *XQ*, *XT*, *CTR*; to understand which observe the following rules.

Rule I. The letters *BST* and *BSTR* are to be pronounced in all the words in which they occur, according to their original, as *abstenér*, to abstain; *abstinéncia*, abstinence; *obstáculo*, obstacle; *substituir*, to substitute; *abstrabér*, to make an abstract; *abstrácto*, an abstract; because they are all distinctly pronounced in the Spanish.

Rule II. *CT*, and *CTR*, are also to be pronounced and written as in the original, as *dócto*, learned; *doctór*, doctor; *récto*, right; *doctrina*, doctrine; *pléctro*, a quill, used to play upon the strings of a harp; and this without any exception, otherwise it would appear an affectation.

Rule III. In the words in which concur *MPC* and *MPT* the letter *P* is lost, because it is not really pronounced in *assumpción*, assumption; *exempción*, exemption; *redempción*, *redemptór*, *promptitud*, &c. so that they are to be written thus *assunción*, &c.

I cannot pass over an observation which occurs to me here, and is that the gentleman of the Academy change *MP* into *N*, being of opinion that the said words are to be pronounced thus *assunción*, *redención*; for which resolution I cannot see nor find any other foundation,

foundation, than the mere affectation of pronouncing *M* as *N* (an abuse which I observed when at *Madrid*) confounding in it not only the *Spanish* but even the pronunciation of the *Latin* tongue: I say, that I observed many to pronounce the words of Transubstantiation thus: *boc est enim corpus meum*, instead of saying with distinction and clearness, *boc est enim corpus meum*. I can't but be much surprised that an academic body, and such as that of the Royal Academy of *Madrid* composed of persons of such learning and eminency, had taken no notice of the like abuse, and to give to the *M* the pronunciation as they ought in the combination of all the vowels, there being no reason to make the least alteration in it.

Rule IV. When *n&t* occur together in *Latin*, all the letters are often preserved in *Spanish* in writing, but the *c* is hardly, if at all pronounced in speaking, as *sáncto*, *sanctidád*, *distínto*, *púncto*, &c. write *sánto*, *santidád*, &c.

NSC and *NSCR* are to be pronounced in the words where they are found, as *transcendentál*, *conscripto*, *inscripto*, this word *consciéncia* excepted, in which the *s* is not specified.

NSP and *NST* are retained in the *Spanish*, as *conspiración*, *transparente*, *transposición*, *transportár*, *transplantár*, *constár*, *constáncia*, *constitución*, *insti-tución*, &c. the use of the letters *NSTR* must be kept in the words *constreñir*, *construir*, *construcción*, *demonstráble*, *demonstración*, *instruir*, *instrucción*, *ménstruo*, *mónstruo*, &c. which otherwise happens in *mostrár*, *mostradór*, *mostréncio*, and their derivations in which *n* is omitted.

N. B. It is to be observed by the by, that the *n* is lost in these words *Trasteár*, *Trasladár*, *Trasládo*, *Trastucír*, *Trasnocabár*, *Traspalar*, *Traspájjo*, *Trastrocár*, for the reason of being so admitted: but is preserved in the following *Transferir*, *Transfiguración*, *Transgredión*,

26 *The RUDIMENTS of
Trasgredíón, Translación, Transmigración, Transmular,
Transformár, Transubstanciación, Transversál.*

Rule V. The two consonants *S C* are to be retained in those words, in which the vowels *a* or *u* follows them, as *escála*, *escáma*, *escóta*, *escuélá*, *escória*, *Pescádo*, *Pescúezo*: and although the *s* is not pronounced in the words *apacentár*, *adolecér*, *conciéncia*, *ciéncia*, *conocér*, *crecér*, *florécér*, *pacér*, yet it is retained in *ascendér*, *ascendéncia*, *ascen-
dente*, *adolescéncia*, *condescendér*, *descendér*, *descenir*, *aquiescéncia*, *disceptación*, *discernir*, *disciplina*, *discí-
pulo*, *miscelánea*.

Rule VI. *XC*, when between two vowels, are to be pronounced if they are so in the original, as *excélsó*, *éxcelente*, *excídio*, *excommunión*, *excúsa*, *ex-
cusár*, &c. without exception. The like is to be observed in the concurrence of *XCL* and *XCR*, as *exclamár*, *excluir*, *excreménito*, &c. as likewise when after *x* follow *p* alone, *pl*, or *pr*, as *experién-
cia*, *exposición*, *explanár*, *explicár*, *explorár*, *exprí-
mir*. And lastly, when *q* or *t* follow *x* their original is to be attended to, as *exquisíto*, *extender*, *exterioridád*, *extinguír*; *extrabér*, *extrémo*, *extrangéro*, *extraordinário*, &c.

C H A P. V.

Of the Dipthongs.

THE concurrence of two vowels, which compose but one syllable, is so frequent in the *Spanisb* tongue, that the like is hardly to be found in any other. For tho' the vowels are but five, yet they admit twenty combinations; to which *Anthony* *de*

de Nebrixa, in his treatise of the Spanish Orthography, gives the name of diphthongs; Valéra, Sandoval, on the Rudiments of the Grammar, and several other authors are of the same opinion, tho' Renfijo in his poetical treatise attributes the joining of the two vowels in one syllable to the figure Syneresis. But as it is said in the 2d chapter, a diphthong is a perceptible sound of the two vowels in one syllable, and as in the following examples, the combination of the vowels make only one syllable in the Spanish tongue, they are admitted as diphthongs, and both vowels pronounced with some distinction, and a perceptible sound, viz.

In *ae*, as *acaecimiento*, accident; *albaaes*, a sort of bills of the court of justice.

In *ai*, as *aire*, air; *alcáide*, a governor of a castle.

In *ao*, as *cbaos*, a confusion; *daos*, do ye give, or give ye.

In *au*, as *causa*, cause; *cautela*, caution.

In *ea*, as *beatitud*, blessedness, holiness; *fea* from *ser*, to be, pres. optative.

In *ei* or *ey*, as *péine*, a comb; *réino*, a kingdom; *léy*, the law; *réy*, king.

In *eo*, as *Geometría*, Geometry; *beodéz*, drunkenness.

In *eu*, as *déuda*, a debt; *féudo*, a fief.

In *ia*, as *liadúra*, a binding; *súfia* or *súzia*, a foul dirty thing.

In *ie*, as *Ciélo*, Heaven; *miédo*, fear.

In *io*, as *súfio*, adj. dirty, foul; *dió*, he gave.

In *iu*, as *ciudad*, a city; *viudo*, a widower.

In *oa*, as *lóa*, praise; *loáble*, praise-worthy.

In *oi*, as *dói*, I give; *bói*, this day; *sói*, I am.

In *oe*, as *béroe*, an hero; *roedúra*, a gnawing.

In *ou*, as *Costiño*, the surname of a family, or a shed in a park; *Móura*, a town, or a surname of a family.

In *ua*, as *quál*, which; *cuájo*, rennet to make cheese.

In *ue*, as *buéno*, good; *suégo*, fire.

In *ui*, as *búitre*, a vulture; *cuidádo*, care.

In *uo*, as *águo*, I water, or mix water to wine, &c. *mútuo*, mutual.

But it must be observed, that not always the two vowels tho' joined together compose one syllable or a diphthong: because when the accent is put on the last, then they form two vowels, *cáe*, *bói*, *ráe*, *mútuo* are monosyllables, and the same vowels in *caér*, *oí*, *raér*, *mutuó* make two syllables.

It must be noted also, that in the concurrence of those vowels, the *i* is always the *Latin* one, and not *y*; and so it would be a notorious error to make use of the *y* in these words, writing *áyre*, *búytre*, *réyno*, *soysón*, when they are to be written thus *áire*, *búitre*, &c. because the *i* does not strike as the *y* on another vowel: except from this rule all the nouns terminated in *y* which in plural is made consonant, *réyes*, *léyes*, *buéyes*.

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is the sounding of three vowels put together in one syllable, and are five in Spanish, viz.

In *iai*, as *decíais*, ye did fay; *bebíais*, ye were drinking.

In *iao*, as *avíaos*, make ye ready; *precíaos*, let ye be valued.

In *iei*, as *envicíeis*, that you may corrupt; *sentencíeis*, that you may give sentence.

In *uai*, as *agúais*, ye put water into the liquor; *gúai*, a laff.

In *uei*, as *juguéis*, that ye may play; *buitre* for *buitre*, a vulture.

There are some authors who add another diphthong of *ieu*, but in this they must be deceived, because the *i* or *u* in the nouns where *ieu* is found, are consonants, as *Arroyuelo*, a little brook; *vive*, live thou.

C H A P. VI.

Of the Accents, &c.

ACCENTS are tones in speaking, of which there are two sorts in Spanish, the *Grave* and *Acute*. *Grave* is that which descends obliquely from the left to the right thus ' , and is only used in the Spanish language on the four vowels *á*, *é*, *ó*, *ú*, when each is separate, and makes a perfect sense by itself. *Acute* is that which descends from the right to the left thus ' , and serves to prolong, make acute and strong the pronunciation, as *arnés*, armour; *amó*, he loved; *amará*, he will love; and it is also used to denote the quantity of the syllable.

But the most common use of the acute is to shew upon what syllable the strength of the pronunciation lies, for some words quite alter their signification according to the placing of the accent; as *cántara*, a sort of measure or pitcher; *cantára*, I would sing; *cantará*, he will sing; *libro*, a book; *libró*, he delivered, discharged, or gave a bill. When two or three consonants follow a vowel, there is no necessity to mark the accent upon it, their pronunciation being long by nature: the words whose consonants are mute or liquid are excepted, as *árbitro*, an arbitrator; *cátedra*, a chair in which a professor teaches

30 *The RUDIMENTS of*
 teaches any science ; *lúgubre*, mournful ; the same
 is to be observed in the words called *esdrúxulos*,
 dactyles ; as *águila*, an eagle ; *música*, musick ;
máximo, greatest ; which have the accent in the
 antepenultima. From whence is inferred, how er-
 roneous is the opinion of those who make use of the
 Grave accent instead of the Acute, without understand-
 ing the sense of these words ; because the accent Grave
 never makes a syllable long, but depresses and moderates
 the pronunciation.

To clear these things, and that it may be known
 where the accent might be laid on the Spanish words,
 I insert here the following rules.

R U L E I.

All Spanish words are derived from the *Latin*,
 have their accent on the same syllable as in the
Latin words, when in the ablative case of the sin-
 gular, (because, as I intend to say hereafter, the
 Spanish words are formed from the ablative singular
 of the *Latin* words) except when they retain the
Latin nominative, as *sénix*, *régimen*, *sál*, &c. viz.

Latin.	Spanish.	English.
<i>Aquila</i> ,	<i>Aguila</i> ,	an Eagle.
<i>Amicus</i> ,	<i>Amigo</i> ,	a Friend.
<i>Baculum</i> ,	<i>Bacúlo</i> ,	a Staff.
<i>Clericus</i> ,	<i>Clérigo</i> ,	a Clergyman.
<i>Limes</i> ,	<i>Límite</i> ,	a Limit, or Bound.
<i>Pontifex</i> ,	<i>Pontífice</i> ,	a Pontiff, the Pope.
<i>Prudens</i> ,	<i>Prudente</i> ,	Prudent.
<i>Spiritus</i> ,	<i>Espíritu</i> ,	a Spirit.
<i>Terminus</i> ,	<i>Término</i> ,	a Term, or Limit.
<i>Vapor</i> ,	<i>Vapór</i> ,	a Vapor.

All the superlatives in *íssimo*, and *íssima*, have
 their accent in the antepenultima in *Latin*, as *aman-*
tíssimo-ma,

tíssimo-ma, most loved; *castíssimo-ma*, most chaste; *beatíssimo-ma*, most holy, &c. add to these *ínfimo*, lowest, meanest, *íntimo*, intimate; *máximo*, greatest; *mínimo*, the least; *óptimo*, best; *próximo*, nearest neighbour; *último*, utmost, last, &c.

Rule II. Of the penultima syllable.

ALL words ending in *ia*, which denote some office, quality, passions of mind, place, or an aggregation of several things, have their accent on the penultima, as

Alcaldía, the office of a magistrate.

Alegria, mirth, &c.

Clericía, the clergy.

Especería, a grocer's shop.

Enfermería, an apartment for the sick.

Librería, a library.

Herrería, a smith's shop.

Hospedería, a place to entertain strangers in, &c.

Panadería, a baker's shop.

Mejoría, growing better.

Menoría, minority.

Señoría, lordship.

Of this kind are the words that have any of these vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, before another vowel in the penultima, as

Albacéa, an executor of a will.

Aldéa, a village.

Bilbáo, Bilboa.

Boléo, the flight of a ball.

Corréa, a leather strap.

Corréo, a post-mail.

Floréo, a flourish.

Grangéu, gain, purchase, &c.

Livréa, livery.

Lóa, praise.

Pica, a soldier's pike, or a fish so called.

Regadéo, merry-making, &c.

Except

Except *área*, an area ; *frámea*, a dart ; *foráneo*, belonging to the court of judicature ; *idóneo*, apt ; *incorpóreo*, incorporeal ; *mónstruo*, a monster, &c. which have the accent in antepenultima.

To this rule belong, all the words which carry the diphthongs in the penultima, as

Amáine, let him strike sail ; *báile*, a ball, *náipes*, playing cards ; *apláuso*, applause, &c. without exception.

The diminutives do likewise belong to this rule, as *asníco*, *asníllo*, a little ass ; *boníco*, *boníto*, somewhat pretty, &c.

Rule III. *Of the last syllable.*

ALL nouns ending in *d*, *i*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *x*, *z*, have their accent on the last syllable, as those in

B. *Abád*, an Abbot ; *beldád*, beauty ; except *áspid*, an asp ; *buésped*, an host, a landlord.

I. *Albelí*, a clove-gilliflower-violet, *bocací*, buckram, &c. except *cási*, almost.

L. *animál*, *caracól*, a snail ; *generál*, except *ágil*, nimble, active ; *ángel*, angel ; *apóstol*, apostle, *cónsul*, consul ; *fácil*, easy ; *defícil*, difficult, &c.

N. *Afán*, labour, weariness ; *almidón*, starch ; except *crímen*, crime ; *exámen*, examination ; *imágen*, an image ; *jóven*, youth ; *márgen*, margin ; *órden*, order ; and other Latin words.

R. *Amór*, love ; *mugér*, a woman ; except *acíbar*, aloes ; *alcázar*, a castle, palace ; *almíbar*, sugar, boiled to a consistence, *ánsar*, a goose, &c.

S. *Ambagrís*, ambergrise ; *anís*, anniseed ; except *ántes*, rather ; *árlos*, shrubs ; *agátas*, on all four like a cat ; *à sabiendas*, knowingly, designedly ; *de brúces*, with the mouth downwards ; *en-tónces*, then, &c.

X. *Almoradúx*, the sweet marjoram ; *baláx*, a precious stone, &c. without exception.

Z. *Arcadúz*, aqueduct ; *Albornóz*, a sort of upper garment used by the Moors, &c. except *Alférez*, an ensign, &c.

All adverbs of place have their accent on the last syllable, as *acá*, hither ; *aculía*, yonder ; *allá*, thither ; *allí*, there ; *dó*, where ; *adó*, to what place ; *dedó*, from whence ; *aquí*, here, &c. and the following words : *albalá*, a sort of writing ; *Alcalá*, a name of a city in Spain, &c.

As the accent will be put upon the verb through all their tenses and moods, according to order in the conjugations, it will be needless to speak of them here.

CHAP. VII.

Of the manner of Pointing.

THE want of distinctions in clauses makes writing very imperfect, and to put them in an improper place, causes such *equivocation* in the sense, that this sense either is not understood, or at least is confounded. For which reason, and for the proper division of words, and clauses of periods and speeches ; it must be known, that there are eight signs, notes, or particles, used to this purpose.

I. *Comma*, *subdistinction*, encise, or a stroke formed thus (,) and so called to denote the half suspension, or pause, which denotes the expectation of something else to follow ; it serves likewise di-

D distinctly

distinctly to separate one clause from another, as *Felicidad es de un Reino tener un Príncipe sabio, que abrace lo bueno, y evite lo malo, baciendo justicia a todos*, it is a happiness to a kingdom to have a wise Prince, that embraces the good, and shuns evil, doing justice to every body.

2. A full stop formed thus (.) serves to denote, that the period is quite formed, and that the speech is perfectly concluded: as *nadie se alabe, basta que acabe*. Let no body praise himself, till he gets what he is about. *Albricias madre, que pregónan a mi padre*, give me something mother for my good news, for they are crying my father; said of people that mistake good news for bad, or rejoice in other's misfortunes.

3. Comma and a point thus (;) formed; (called by the Greeks an imperfect Colon, or Semicolon) is used to denote the implication and contradiction of things in the speech, or that they differ, as *los Padres son dignos de reverencia; Pero Dios de adoración*, Fathers deserve a reverence or respect; but God worship. *Pedro es sabio; pero su soberbia le deshice*. Peter is a wise man; but his pride dishonours him.

4. Two points (called by the Greeks a perfect Colon) marked thus (:) serve to denote that the sense is not perfectly expressed in the speech, and that there is something wanting to perfect it: as *no bacér mal alguno es inocencia: no bacér mal a otro es justicia*, to do no evil is innocence: but justice to wrong no body. *La injuria si es verdád, tómala por advertencia: si es mentira, por crédito*, the injury if it is true, take it as a warning: if false, for reputation and credit.

5. Note of Interrogation formed thus (?) denotes that something is asked or questioned: as *a donde vás?* where you are going? &c.

6. A note of Admiration thus (!) express the affection of mind and surprise caused by a sudden

news or consideration of something: as *O Cíelos!* *O Heaven!* *o bondad divina!* O divine goodness! *o tiempos!* O times! *o vicios!* O vices! *o costumbres!* O customs! *o depravados siglos!* O corrupted age!

7. A Parenthesis thus () serves to separate a clause, without which the speech may have a perfect sense, to the end that it may be more plain, and to avoid confusion: as *el ministro sábio (que juntamente es desinterzado)* es digno de tóta alabanza, a wise minister (who is altogether disinterested) is worthy of every body's praise.

8. Dieresis thus (") is a Greek word (called by the Printers Crema, and signifies a severing or division) and serves to separate two vowels which might be joined in one syllable, and to note that both are to be pronounced plainly and with distinction. Anciently this mark was put upon the *u*, and *i* vowels, when before another vowel; because there was no difference made in writing between the *i* and *u*, to shew when they ought to be vowels and when consonants; now this division is to be put on the *u*: as *eloquiente*, eloquent; *freqüencia*, frequency. And this only in the words where *u* is pronounced plainly and openly; so that there is no need of a Dieresis in these *guerra*, war; *guía*, guide; *guinda*, a common cherry; *quince*, fifteen.

To these add the note of Division or stroke figured thus (-) which is put at the end of a line, when the word is divided or cut, that it may be known that it is not finished: as in these (carefully dividing each syllable as children in spelling) *á-nimo*, *áni-mo*, courage, mind; it cannot be divided thus: *án-im-o*, nor thus *anim-o*: in the words where two *ss*, *rr*, &c. are found, then the first consonant is pronounced with the preceding vowel, and the second with the following, and so *accidente*, accident; and

36 *The RUDIMENT S of
boníssimo, the best, the most pretty or better are
to be divided thus ac-cidente or acciden-te, bonif-simo.*

Apostrophe is a stroke put over some letters to denote that another letter, which ought to be there, is left out, and lost by the figure *Synalepbe* of the following vowel: as *d'el* of him, *del'água*, of water; *qu'éra*, which was; *s'omíte*, it is omitted. Which manner is much used in the *English*, and *French* languages; and tho' in old *Spanish* books it is often observed, yet common use has left it off in the *Spanish* language, as an insignificant thing, which often confounds; so that by joining the letters are single words formed, saying *del*, *essoíro*, the other; *estótro*, this other; or writing the two *ee* or *ea* for better intelligence, thus *de el*, *éffe ótro*, *éste ótro*, *que éra*, *se ofende*, &c.

Of the use of capital letters.

WITH capital letters are to begin any writing, paragraph, period, or speech, after a final point; all the proper names, as well of persons, provinces, kingdoms, districts, cities, towns, villages, mountains, rivers, fountains, &c. as the surnames, renowns of authority or fame; those of dignities, titles, honourable employments, and other names of distinction, as King, Prince, &c. and altho' capital letters should be used at the beginning of each verse; yet the *Spaniards* are not exact in this point, for they only begin the verses of their heroic and grand Poems with capital letters, being careless in other species of poetry.

P A R T II.

Of E T Y M O L O G Y.

GREAT is the difference between the mother-
Gly or dead tongues, and the modern or living ones: because what the first of its firmness or stability will not allow the liberty of inventing or changing a word, case, nor tense, without the risk of committing a barbarism or solecism; the latter, being in the arbitrary power of the living, is nourished, either by adding some words, perfecting those in use, or forgetting those which in it's stuttering age were used. To this was likewise subject the *Latin* tongue, till it was cultivated by *Cicero*, *Plautus*, *Virgil*, &c. it sprang up in time of *Janus* and *Saturnus*, in whose language the priests of *Mars* wrote those verses called by their name *Salii*, which are kept in reverence or respect of the age, which shews the unpolished infancy of that language: it increased in time of *Latius*, from whence was derived the *Latin*, when the twelve law tables were written in *Latin*; and was perfect in the flourishing age of the *Romans*: but as soon as their empire finished, the language fell with it, degenerating in such a manner, that at present is looked on as half corrupted, there being so many barbarisms in its Latinity.

For which like reason, many are the words which the tyrant Use has introduced in the *Spanish* language, whose root has no other trench than the good pleasure of men; and other words are so much degenerated from their original, that almost deny their birth: as *desabuciár*, to desert (is called Physician's verb, and is only used to express when

38. *The RUDIMENT\$ of*
a man is given over by the Physicians) from the
Latin fiducia, but has quite opposite sense ; *lavár*,
to wash ; from *lódo*, mud, mire, or dirt.

Many have been the authors who treated on Etymologies, but who treated with better order and method was St *Isidore*, a *Spaniard*, whose rules has followed the Royal Academy at *Madrid* in their new dictionary of the *Spanish* language ; to which I refer the curious.

Etymology (as a part of the Grammar) denotes and shews the way to find out the cases of nouns, tenses of verbs, their regularity and irregularity, and the variety of parts in a speech ; some authors define Etymology thus : *The knowledge and discretion of the parts and particles of a speech.* And to proceed to particulars, we think it proper to begin with

C H A P. I.

Of the eight parts of speech, and especially of Nouns.

IN *Spanish* as well as in *Latin*, there are eight parts of speech.

Noun,	declin'd.	Adverb,
Pronoun,		Conjunction,
Verb,		Preposition,
Participle.		Interjection,

Nouns

AN Noun is a part of speech, which signifies a thing without any reference to time, &c. *as mano*, a hand ; *casa*, a house.

Nouns are divided into substantives and adjectives.

A noun substantive is that which can stand by itself, without an adjective, as *bómbre*, a man; *caballo*, a horse, &c. whereas the adjective cannot stand by itself, as being of no value without the addition of the substantive, as *buéno*, good; *brioso* mettlesome, &c. give no perfect notion of themselves, but are explained by being conjoined to the substantives, as *bómbre buéno*, a good man; *caballo brioso*, a mettlesome horse.

Nouns substantives are divided into proper names and appellatives. The proper names are such as signify certain determinate things, as *Juán*, John; *Róma*, Rome. Appellatives are those that signify things undeterminate, as *iglesia*, a church; *cása*, a house. Some of the nouns are called *primitives*, that is original; others derivatives for their being derived of others, as *lección*, *oído*. Nouns are again divided into simple, as *justo*, just; and compound, as *injusto*, unjust.

There are also diminutives and augmentatives, in both which the *Spanish* abounds more than any other language, there being no word but what admits of several diminutives, to represent the thing spoken of, little; and augmentatives, to represent it greater.

Diminutives are formed by adding to the word *illo*, *íco*, *íto*, *éte*, *uélo*, or *éjo*, and sometimes *ote*.

For Example, .

Hómbre, a man; forms *Hombrecillo*, *Hombrecíco*, *Hombrecíto*.

Mucbácho, a boy; *Mucbachillo*, *Mucbachíco*, *Mucbachíto*, *Mucbachuélo*.

Where observe the difference between these several sorts, which is that those ending in *illo* and *uélo*, as

Hombrecillo, Mucbacbuélo, and the like, denote something of contempt, as, a pitiful little man or boy ; whereas those ending in *ico*, or *ito*, only denote smallness, and sometimes kindness, as when we say *Juanico* or *Juanito*, which is *Johnny* or *Jacky*.

Diminutives in *ete* and *ino* likewise denote nothing but smallness, as *mózo*, a youth ; *mozete*, a young lad ; *palóma*, a dove ; *palomino*, a young pigeon ; whereas those in *ejo* imply at the same time something of contempt or dislike, as *cucbillo*, a knife ; *cucbilléjo*, a pitiful little knife ; *bidálgo*, a gentleman ; *bidalgóte*, an inconsiderable gentleman.

The same is also used in adjectives, as *grande*, large or great ; *grandezillo*, *grandezico*, *grandezuélo*, *grandete*, all which signify *largish*, as we may express it, or *somewhat large*.

There are moreover diminutives formed upon diminutives ; as *chico*, small ; *chiquito*, smaller than the other, and *chiquitico*, very small.

There are on the other hand augmentatives, as has been said, which enlarge, or represent a thing bigger, without any degree of comparison ; and these are formed by adding *ázo*, *on*, or *óte*, to the word, as *bómbre*, a man ; *bombrázo*, *bombrón* or *bombróte*, a great lusty man ; *pérro*, a dog ; *perrázo*, *perrón*, or *perrote*, a great large dog.

The nouns numeral, or of number, called cardinals, are as follows :

<i>Uno, one.</i>	<i>Nuéve, nine.</i>
<i>Dos, two.</i>	<i>Diéz, ten.</i>
<i>Tres, three.</i>	<i>'Once, eleven.</i>
<i>Quátro, four.</i>	<i>Dóce, twelve.</i>
<i>Cinco, five.</i>	<i>Tréce, thirteen.</i>
<i>Séis, six.</i>	<i>Catórce, fourteen.</i>
<i>Siéte, seven.</i>	<i>Quínce, fifteen.</i>
<i>Ocho, eight.</i>	<i>Diez y seis, sixteen.</i>
	<i>Dies</i>

Diez y siéte, <i>seventeen.</i>	Quatrocientos, <i>four hundred.</i>
Diez y ócho, <i>eighteen.</i>	Quiniéntos, <i>five hundred.</i>
Diez y nuéve, <i>nineteen.</i>	Seiscientos, <i>six hundred.</i>
Veínte, <i>twenty.</i>	Setecientos, <i>seven hundred.</i>
Veínte y úno, <i>twenty one.</i>	Ochocientos, <i>eight hundred.</i>
Veínte y dos, <i>twenty two.</i>	Nuévecientos } <i>nine hundred.</i>
&c.	or
Tréinta, <i>thirty.</i>	Novecientos, } <i>thousand.</i>
Quarénta, <i>forty.</i>	Mil, <i>a thousand.</i>
Cincuénta, <i>fifty.</i>	Mil y Quiniéntos, <i>a thousand five hundred.</i>
Sesénta, <i>sixty.</i>	Dos mil, <i>two thousand.</i>
Seténta, <i>seventy.</i>	Tres mil, <i>three thousand,</i>
Ochénta, <i>eighty.</i>	&c.
Novénta, <i>ninety.</i>	Cién mil, <i>an hundred thousand.</i>
Ciénto, <i>a hundred.</i>	Millón, <i>a million.</i>
Ciénto y úno, <i>a hundred and one,</i> &c.	
Dociéntos, or <i>Ducientos</i> <i>two hundred.</i>	
Treciéntos, <i>three hundred.</i>	

N. B. That all these cardinals are undeclined, and of the common gender, except *úno*, *una*, *úno*, in plural *únos*, *únas*, and *ciénto*, *dociéntos*, *dociéntas*. *Úno* masculine (in the singular only) when it comes before a noun loses *o*, as *un libro*, a book; *un soldado*, a soldier. *Ciento* likewise loses *o* when before a noun, either masculine, or feminine, as *cién soldados*, hundred soldiers; *cién mugéres*, hundred women: but when another number follows it with a conjunction between, then it retains *o*, as *ciénto y úno*, *ciénto y dos*, &c. When *ciénto* has *un* before, then it is made substantive, and governs a genitive, as *un ciento de caballos*, or *un centenár de caballos*, an hundred of horse.

All the numbers from *ciento* to *mil*, are masculine, and may be made feminine, changing *os* in *as*, as *duciéntos*, *ducientás*, *mil* is undeclined, and of the common gender, but *millón*, a million, is

42 *The RUDIMENTS of*
is masculine and declined, as, *un millón, dos*
millones.

*The ordinals which declare the order of time, or
place, are*

Primero, <i>first.</i>	Trigésimo, or Treinténo, <i>thirtieth.</i>
Segundo, <i>second.</i>	Quadragésimo, or Qua- renténo, <i>fortieth.</i>
Tercero, <i>third.</i>	Quinquagésimo, or Cin- cuenténo, <i>fiftieth.</i>
Quarto, <i>fourth.</i>	Sexagésimo, or Sesenté- no, <i>sixtieth.</i>
Quinto, <i>fifth.</i>	Septuagésimo, or Seten- téno, <i>seventieth.</i>
Séxto, <i>sixth.</i>	Octuagésimo, or Ochen- téno, <i>eighieth.</i>
Séptimo, <i>seventh.</i>	Nonagésimo, or Noven- téno, <i>ninetieth.</i>
Octávo, <i>eighth.</i>	Centésimo, Cienténo, or <i>Centéno, hundredth.</i>
Nóno, or Novéno, <i>ninth.</i>	Docientésimo, or Docie- nténo, <i>two hundredth.</i>
Décimo, or Decéno, <i>tenth.</i>	Trecentésimo, or Tre- centéno, <i>three hun- dredth.</i>
Undécimo, or Oncéno, <i>eleventh.</i>	Quattrocentésimo, or Quattrocienténo, <i>four hundredth.</i>
Duodécimo, or Docéno, <i>twelfth.</i>	Quingentésimo, or Qui- nienténo, <i>five hun- dredth, &c.</i>
Décimotercio, or Tre- céno, <i>thirteenth.</i>	Milésimo, <i>thousandth.</i>
Décimoquarto, or Cator- céno, <i>fourteenth.</i>	
Décimoquinto, or Quin- céno, <i>fifteenth.</i>	
Décimo sexto, <i>sixteenth.</i>	
Décimo séptimo, <i>Sev- enteenth.</i>	
Décimo octávo, <i>eigh- teenth.</i>	
Décimo nono, <i>nineteenth.</i>	
Vigésimo, or Veinténo, <i>twentieth.</i>	

*Note, that the Spaniards make use of the ordinals
and cardinals promiscuously, as en el año de mil se-
cientos y ócbo, for en el año milésimo seiscientésimo y
octávo : el año quínce, for décimo quínto ; ciénto y
seténto.*

sestenta y séte, for *centésimo septuagésimo séptimo*, this must be understood only in the computation of years, chapters, &c. the ordinals are masculine, and by changing *o* in *a* are feminine, as *primero*, *primera*.

The nouns numeral called *distributives*, or of *order*, are

De uno en uno, *one by one.*

De dos en dos, *by two and two.*

De tres entre, *by three and three.*

De quatro en quatro, *by four and four.*

De cinco en cinco, *by five and five, &c.*

as los *Fráiles van de dos en dos fuera del convento*, the Fryars when they go out of the convent they go by two and two.

Note, that when the letter *a* is put between the two cardinals as *uno à uno*, then *à* stand instead of *contra*, against ; as *dos à dos*, two to or against two : the same is in these, *tantos à tantos*, so many against so many, as *riñámos quatro à quatro*, or *tantos à tantos*, let us fight four to four, or so many against so many, that is even or equal in number.

Of ADJECTIVES.

THE termination of Spanish adjectives is for the most part in *e*, or *o*, as *grande*, large ; *dulce*, sweet ; *bréve*, short ; *bueno*, good ; *santo*, holy, &c.

But there are other adjectives also, whose termination is in *l*, as *útil*, useful ; *débil*, weak ; *frágil*, frail ; *fértil*, fruitful ; and others in *z*, as *capáz*, capable ; *rapáz*, ravenous.

Those that terminate in *e*, never vary in any gender ; so in the adjectives, *grande*, great ; *dulce*, sweet ; *terrible*, terrible, we say in the masculine gender,

gender, *hombre grande*, a great man ; in the feminine, *mujer grande*, a great woman ; and in the neuter, *lo grande*, that which is great.

Those that terminate in *o*, in the feminine gender, change their termination into *a*, as in *bueno*, good, the masculine is, *hombre bueno*, a good man ; the feminine, *mujer buena*, a good woman ; but the neuter is again in *o*, as *lo bueno*, that which is good.

Such as terminate in *l*, or *z*, never change in any gender.

The adjectives *grande*, great ; and *bueno*, good ; are often placed before the substantives, and then sometimes they loose the last syllable, as is usual to say, *gran hombre*, a great man ; *buén caballo*, a good horse ; but the feminine gender, *buena*, is not liable to that abbreviation, because the cutting off the *a*, would make it masculine, and therefore it must always be said, *buena mujer*, a good woman ; *buena casa*, a good house.

Santo, when it signifies a saint, has always the last syllable cut off before the proper name, and we say, *San Pedro*, St Peter ; *San Andrés*, St Andrew, &c. except only out of this general rule, *Santo Domigno*, *Santo Thomás*, *Santo Toribio*, and any saints names that begin with *Do*, or *To*, because the cutting off the last syllable of *Santo*, before them would sink the sound of the name. In speaking of a female saint, no letter is cut off, but it is pronounced at length, as *Santa Apolónia*, *Santa Margarita*, &c.

The degrees of comparison.

ALL Adjectives have their three degrees of comparison ; the positive, which plainly and simply denotes the thing, as *docto*, learned ; *discreto*, discreet, &c.

The comparative either enhances or debases the thing, making a comparison, as *mas docto*, more learned ;

learned; *ménos dòcto*, less learned; *mas sánto*, more holy; *ménos sánto*, less holy.

The superlative raises the thing to the highest pitch, or debases it to the lowest, as *cabállo velocíssimo*, a most fleet horse; *cára bellissima*, a most beautiful face.

In *Spanish* there is no comparative degree formed from the positive, as in the *Latin*, but that defect is supplied, by adding the article *mas*, more, or *ménos*, less, to the positive; as *claro*, clear; *mas claro*, clearer, or more clear; *obscuro*, dark; *ménos obscuro*, less dark.

The superlative degree is formed when the positive ends in a vowel, by changing that last vowel into *íssimo*, as from *claro*, clear; make the superlative *claríssimo*, most clear; or by the adverb *mui*, very; or by *múcho mas*, saying *mui*, or *mucho mas* *claro*: but if the positive ends in a consonant, add *íssimo*, as from *vil*, base; *vilíssimo*, most base; from *capáz*, capable, *capacíssimo*, most capable.

The six following words are an exception from the rules above, in relation to the comparative degree, for their superlatives follow the common rule, where note that in these the comparative quite varies from the positive, as follows.

Buén, good; *méjor*, better; *boníssimo*, or *óptimo*, best of all.

Málo, bad; *peór*, worse; *péssimo*, or *malíssimo*, worst of all.

*Grán*de, great; *mayór*, greater; *grandíssimo*, or *máximo*, greatest of all.

*Pequén*o, little; *ménor*, less; *pequeñíssimo*, or *minímo*, least of all.

Múcho, much; *mas*, more; *muchíssimo*, most of all.

Póco, little; *ménos*, less; *poquíssimo*, least of all.

These two are without a positive and comparative.

Acérrimo,

Acérximo, extraordinary eager, tenacious, &c.
Ubérximo, extraordinary fruitful.

Of GENDER S.

IT is no easy matter to determine, whether there are as many genders in *Spanisb*, as in the *Latin*, which has five, viz. the masculine, the feminine, the neuter, the common of two, and the common of three. The question arises from the *Spanisb*, having no substantives of the neuter gender, whence it follows that no adjectives can have it, as being only an accident of the other, and there cannot be that in the accident which is not in the subject ; whence it will follow that there can be only three genders, the masculine, the feminine, and the common of two.

But this notion, though supported by many, must needs be erroneous ; for it is plain that when adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are used as substantives, there is a neuter gender, as appears by the three several articles that express them, for *el* is the masculine, *la* the feminine, and *lo* the neuter ; for example, *el bóm̄bre*, the man ; *la mugér*, the woman ; and *lo buén̄o*, that which is good. This is again demonstrable in the articles, *éste cabállo*, this horse ; *ésta Burra*, this she ass ; and *ésto*, this thing ; which exactly answer to the *Latin*, *bis*, *bæc*, *boc* : and therefore it is infallible that these three genders must have a being. As to the others, take the following rules.

1. All adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are of the common gender of three, that is, they will admit of three articles, *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, by which the three genders are expressed, which is not only to be supposed when they alter their termination, as *buén̄o*, *buéna*, *buén̄o*, but also when they always retain the same, as *amán̄te*, *prudénte*, &c.

2. All nouns that are under one and the same termination expressing both man and woman, or the male and female of any sort of living creature, are of the common gender of two, as *éste guarda*, this man keeper ; *ésta guarda*, this woman keeper.

3. The epicene under one termination denotes both the male and female of all animals, and yet has only the masculine, or the feminine article, to express both kinds, for which reason the words *máculo*, male ; or *bémbara*, female ; are added to make the distinction, as, *ésta codorniz máculo*, this cock quail ; *éste zorzal bémbara*, this hen thrush.

4. All names signifying the males of any sort of animals, are of the masculine gender, as *Pédro*, Peter ; *bómbre*, a man ; *cónde*, an earl ; *León*, a lion. And all that signify the female of any sort, are of the feminine gender, as *María*, Mary ; *mugér*, a woman ; *marquésa*, a marchioness.

Those words are of the doubtful gender, which have sometimes the masculine, and sometimes the feminine prefixed by authors. But for as much as this ambiguity at first proceeded from ignorance, it will be proper for those who understand better, notwithstanding the privilege grounded on custom, to give every word its proper gender. Some words of this sort that occur, are *árte*, *canál*, *colór*, *eclipse*, *embléma*, *mar*, *órden*, *márgen*, *orígen*, *tbéma*. These we frequently find used with either of the articles *el*, or *la*, as, *el árte*, or *la árte*, the art ; and yet it ought certainly to be *la*, to denote the feminine, as in the *Latin*, from whence it is derived ; the same may be said of all others which of right should ever follow their original.

Rules to know the gender of nouns.

AL L nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender, as *pláza*, a square, or market; *rósa*, a rose; *cása*, a house. The exceptions are *planéta*, a planet; *cométa*, a comet, or blazing star; *día*, a day; *probéta*, a prophet; *evangélista*, an evangelist; *poéta*, a poet; *Calvinista*, a Calvinist; *Jesuíta*, a Jesuit; also such as are derived from the Greek, as *dóhma*, a dogma, or a received opinion, *probléma*, a problem; which are masculine, but *embléma*, an emblem, is of doubtless gender.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender, as *diente*, a tooth; *monte*, a mountain. Except, *fé*, faith; *fuente*, a fountain; *llave*, a key; *lécce*, milk; *ménte*, the mind; *torre*, a tower; *tróxe*, a granary; *ánade*, a duck; *alvayálde*, ceruse; *áve*, a fowl; *calle*, a street; *cárne*, flesh; *cláve*, a key of an organ; *corte*, a prince's court; *corriente*, a current; *dote*, a dowry; *espécie*, a species; *frénte*, the forehead; *gente*, people; *muerte*, death; *néve*, snow; *nóche*, night; *núbe*, a cloud; *náve*, a ship; *puente*, a bridge; *párte*, a part; *serpiénte*, a serpent; all which are feminine; but *corte*, when it signifies cutting, shaping, or contriving, is masculine.

Again, all nouns ending in *re*, that have a mute letter before it, are feminine, as *costúmbre*, custom; *sangre*, blood, &c. From which general rule are likewise excepted, *cobre*, copper; *cófre*, a trunk; *enjambré*, a swarm; *nómbre*, a name; and the names of months, *Setiembre*, *Ostubre*, *Noviembre*, *Deciembre*, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine, if derived from the Arabick, as *albelí*, a violet, according to *Nebrissensis*; yet some will have it to be a clove gilliflower; *albolí*, or *alborí*, a granary; *zaborí*, one that pretends to see into things that are not transparent,

transparent, as stone-walls, &c. But such words taken from the *Greek* are feminine, as *éxtasi*, an extasy ; *Sintáxi*, Syntax.

Nouns ending in *o* are masculine, as *cámpo*, a field ; *templo*, a church ; except *máno*, a hand ; *náo*, a ship ; *pró*, good ; for we say, *buéna pro os bága*, much good may it do you.

Nouns ending in *u* are masculine, as *Espíritu*, the spirit ; *ímpetu*, violence.

Nouns ending in *y* are feminine, as *léy*, law ; *gréy*, a flock. Except *Réy*, a King.

This is all that can be said of nouns ending in vowels ; next follow those that end in consonants.

Nouns ending in *d* are generally of the feminine gender, as *cbaridád*, charity ; *babilidád*, ability ; except *césped*, a turf ; *buésped*, an host, or guest ; *ardid*, a stratagem ; *Adalid*, a leader ; *Cenid*, the Zenith ; *almúd*, a certain measure ; *ataúd*, a coffin ; *laúd*, a lute, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *l* are masculine, as *pardál*, a sparrow ; *arancél*, a list or roll. The exceptions are *cál*, lime ; *sál*, salt ; *senál*, a sign, or token ; *cárcel*, a prison ; *biél*, gall ; *miél*, honey ; *piél*, the skin.

Nouns ending in *n* are masculine, as *carbón*, cole ; *Rabadán*, a chief among shepherds ; *almazén*, a storehouse. Except *sién*, the temple of the head ; *sartén*, a frying-pan ; and all words derived from the *Latin* termination in *go*, as *imágen*, an image, from *imago* ; *márgen*, a margin ; from *margo*, &c. Likewise those ending in *ion*, as *región*, a region ; *elección*, election ; and those ending in *azón*, as *razón*, reason ; from which again except, *corazón*, the heart ; *tarazón*, a piece ; which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *r* are masculine, as *amór*, love ; *Alcázar*, a palace ; except *segúr*, an axe, *flór*, a flower ; *labór*, work ; *mugér*, a woman.

Nouns ending in *s* are masculine, as *combés*, the deck of a ship ; *País*, a country, or landskip. Except

50 *The RUDIMENTS of*
cept *miés*, harvest; *Rés*, a head of cattle; *tós*, a
cough; and proper names of women, as *Ignés*,
Agnes.

Nouns ending in *x* are masculine, as *relóx*, a
clock; *carcáx*, a quiver.

Nouns ending in *z*, are for the most part femi-
nine, as *páz*, peace; *niñéz*, childhood; *naríz*, the
nose; *bóz*, a sickle; *lúz*, light. Except *agráz*,
verjuice; *soláz*, comfort; *antifaz*, a vail, or co-
vering for the face; *almiréz*, a mortar; *dobléz*, a
fold, or falsehood; *jaéz*, furniture for a horse; *pez*,
a fish; *axedréz*, a chequer, or draught-board; *var-
níz*, varnish; *tapíz*, a carpet; *matíz*, a shadowing
in painting; *albornóz*, a moorish coat; *arroz*,
rice; *altramúz*, a lupine; all which are mascu-
line.

To these rules may be added, that all nouns signi-
fying the male, must of course be masculine, as
Dúque, a Duke; *gállo*, a cock; *león*, a lion; and
those denoting a female, must be feminine, as *Con-
désa*, a Countess; *gallína*, a hen.

It is further to be observed, that whatsoever the
termination happens to be, the proper names of
rivers are always masculine, as *el Guadiána*, and so
of any others, &c.

Of the other accidents belonging to a Noun.

TH E accidents usually belonging to a noun,
are its declination, cases, numbers, and arti-
cles; but all these particulars must be explained in
the following manner.

. Of Declensions or Declinations.

NOUNS in Spanish are not declined by alter-
ing or varying the termination, or last syl-
lable, as is done in the *Latin*, but by adding and
varying

varying the articles, as they are peculiar to each case.

And if the declensions are known by the variation of the nouns ; it being certain that the *Spaniards* only vary in the plural number : it may be said by deduction that there are five distinct declensions in *Spanish*, as in *Latin* : because the plural numbers end in

As, as *régla*, *régla*s, a rule.

Es, as *pádre*, *pádre*s, a father.

Is, as *rubí*, *rubí*s, and *rubies*, a ruby.

Os, as *témplo*, *témplo*s, a temple or church.

Us, as *tribu*, *tribu*s, a tribe.

There are three particles or notes to denote the cases of a Noun, viz. *De* for the genitive and ablative, *à* or *pára* for the dative, and *ò* for the vocative. These particles are called by other authors *Articles*, but without reason, because the *article* is declinable, and the above particles can never be declined.

Of the Cases.

THE *Spaniards* have six cases, like other languages, being

Nominative, or that which names the thing, and generally goes before the verb, as *Pédro perdió su cápa*, Peter lost his cloak.

Genitive, or that which shows to whom the thing belongs, or from whom it proceeds, as *éste es el perro de Pédro*, this is the dog of Peter ; *Maria es hija de Josepb*, Mary is Joseph's daughter ; so that this case answers to this question, *whose* or *whereof* ?

Dative, or that which shows the place or person to whom the thing is given, and answereth to this question, *to whom* or *to what* ? as *dí mi espáda à mi bermáno*, I gave my sword to my brother.

Accusative, or that which declares the subject of the verb, and answers to this question *whom* or *what?* and follows generally the verb, as *ésta mañana recibí éste presente*, this morning I received this present.

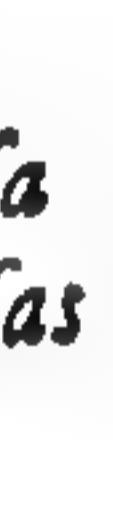
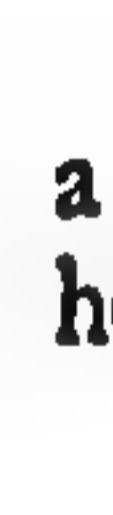
Vocative, is called the case of calling, admiring, or saluting, as *O Pedro ven aquí*, O Peter, pray come here, &c.

Ablative, or that which denotes the place or person from whom the thing is taken, and is generally joined to a preposition, as *procédo de la tierra*, I proceed from the earth.

Of the Numbers.

THE Spaniards like the *Latins*, have two numbers, *viz.*

Singular, which speaketh of
one,
Plural, which speaketh of
many,

cáſa a house
cáſas houses

The singular *Spanish*, if end with a vowel is made plural by adding the letter *s* after it, as *bombe*, *bombres*; *témplo*, *templos*; if end with an *i* vowel is made plural by adding *s* or *es*, as *rubí*, *rubís*, or *rubíes*, a ruby; *borceguí*, *borceguís*, or *borceguíes*, but generally in *es*, except *maravedí*, which makes *maravedís*, or *maravedises*, &c. if the noun end with a consonant in singular, then is made plural by adding *es*, as *dolór*, *dolóres*; *Apóstol*, *Apóstoles*; *páz*, *lúz*; *véz*, *vóz*, change *z* into *c* in plural, as has been observed before, saying *páces*, *lúces*, &c. *x* is not changed into *g* in plural, as some authors wrongfully observe, but is retained, and so from *relóx* say in plural *relóxes*; *carcáx*, *carcáxes*.

Of

Of the Spanish articles.

THE are three articles in the *Spanish* language, as well as in the *Latin*, and are borrowed of the pronoun, *viz.* *el* for the masculines, *la* for the feminines, and *lo* for the neuters. An article (which is an accident to the Noun, and a necessary one to the modern languages) is *a monosyllable*, or *a diction composed of one syllable*, *it is declinable, and serves to distinguish the genders.* The *Spaniards* make use of the articles before all the nouns, except the proper names as in the *English* tongue. *Note*, that the *English* have but one undeclined article, *viz.* *the* for the masculine and feminine, and the particle *it* which often serves for the neuter: so that the *English* make no difference in genders by their article, when they speak of inanimates, except only the word *ship*, which is feminine, and then they make use of the relative *she*, *élla*, saying *she is a 20 gun ship*, *élla es una nave de 20 cañones*.

El.

This article is irregular in the plural, and make *los*, and tho' always placed before nouns masculine, as *el hombre*, the man: it is also used before the feminine nouns beginning with *a* (and this only in singular, because in plural we say *las almas*, *las aguas*) as *el agua*, the water; *el alma*, or *áнима*, the soul; which is permitted *euphoniac gratia*, for the better sound, to avoid two *a*'s coming together, or the cutting one off, which is little used in *Spanish*; because *la agua*, would sound like *l'agua*, and therefore for the more distinction they say *el agua*, as in *French* they say *mon ame*, tho' *ame* be of the feminine gender, and not *ma ame* or *m'ame*. Yet is not this a general rule, for the most received

custom is to preserve *la* for the words of three or four syllables, as *la antiguedad*, antiquity; *la Académia*, the academy.

El is often put before the verb in the infinitive mood, when followed by another verb, as *el comér en tiempo es bueno*, *como tambien el dormir quando se necesita*, to eat when 'its convenient does good, as it is allo to sleep when it is wanted.

When the particles *de* or *a* are joined to *el*, often happens that the Spaniards make one syllable of both, as instead of *de el* or *à el* they say *del* or *al*, as it is said before in the Orthography.

Le in singular, and *les* in plural are often taken as articles by some authors, but without any grounds for so saying; because they never are used before nouns, but only as relatives after verbs in dative or accusative, according to the case governed by the verb, they are likewise used before the verbs, as *dixele esto*, I told him this; *les acompañé*, I accompanied them.

La

Is to be placed before nouns feminine, as *la mugér*, the woman; except those nouns that begin with *a*, as has been said just above: it is likewise used before and after the verb, tho' not as article, but as relative, as *la llamé*, I called her; *llamadla*, call her; the plural of *la* is *las*, and often supplies the noun substantive, as *béso las de v. m^a.* that is *las manos*.

Lo,

As has been said, is the article of the neuter gender, and only used before adjectives, made substantives or taken in that sense, as *lo grande*, that which is great; *lo bueno*, that which is good, this article has no plural number, sometimes *lo* is taken absolutely,

lutely, as *todo lo que me mandare* v. *m^d. baré con gusto*, I will do with pleasure every thing that you will or shall command me. It is used likewise before and after a verb as relative, as *lo dire*, I will say it; *bázlo*, do it.

What has been said of the articles as articles, I think is sufficient for the present, and for the rest I refer the reader to the chapter of Pronouns, and to the Syntax.

The Masculine article is thus declin'd:

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *el*, the
Genitive, *del*, or *de el*, of the
Dative, *à el*, or *al*, or *pára el*, to the
Accusative, *el*, the
Ablative, *del*, or *de el*, from the

The Plural Number.

Nominative, *los*, the
Genitive, *de los*, of the
Dative, *à* or *pára los* to the
Accusative, *los*, the
Ablative, *de los*, from the.

The Feminine thus:

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *la*, the
Genitive, *de la*, of the
Dative, *à*, or *pára la*, to the
Accusative, *la*, the
Ablative, *de la*, from the

The Plural Number.

Nominative, *las*, the
Genitive, *de las*, of the
Dative, *a las*, to the
Accusative, *las*, the
Ablative, *de las*, from the.

The Neuter article thus:

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *lo*, the
Genitive, *de lo*, of the
Dative, *à*, or *pára lo*, to the
Accusative, *lo*, the
Ablative, *de lo*, from the

It has no Plural Number.

Nor are these articles capable of any vocative, without we say, O is general to them all, as, O *hombre*, O man, O *mugér*, O woman.

Examples of the Nouns in their several Terminations.

Words end in *a*.

Sing.	Plur.
Hémbra, <i>a Female</i>	Hémbras, <i>Females</i>
Frúta, <i>Fruit</i>	Frútas, <i>Fruits</i>

Words ending in *e*.

Sing.	Plur.
Hómbre, <i>a Man</i>	Hómbres, <i>Men</i>
Liébre, <i>a Hare</i>	Liébres, <i>Hares</i>

Words ending in *i*.

Sing.	Plur.
Rubi, <i>a Ruby</i>	Rubís, or Rubíes, <i>Rubies</i>
Javalí, <i>a Wild Boar</i>	Javalís, or Javalíes, <i>Wild Boars</i>

Words ending in *o*.

Sing.	Plur.
Cabállo, <i>a Horse</i>	Cabállos, <i>Horses</i>
Milágro, <i>a Miracle</i>	Milágros, <i>Miracles</i>

Words ending in *u*.

Sing.	Plur.
Espríitu, <i>a Spirit</i>	Espríitus, <i>Spirits</i>
Tríbu, <i>a Tribe</i>	Tríbus, <i>Tribes</i>

Words ending in *y*.

Sing.	Plur.
Réy, <i>a King</i>	Réyes, <i>Kings</i>
Léy, <i>a Law</i>	Léyes, <i>Laws</i>

Words

Words ending in *d*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Verdád, <i>Truth</i>	Verdádes, <i>Truths</i>
Mercéd, <i>a Favour</i>	Mercédes, <i>Favours</i>

Words ending in *l*.

Animál, <i>an Animal</i>	Animáles, <i>Animals</i>
Gentíl, <i>a Pagan</i>	Gentíles, <i>Gentiles</i>

Words ending in *n*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pan, <i>Bread</i>	Pánes, <i>Loaves</i>
Clementín, <i>a Peck</i>	Clementínes, <i>Packs</i>

Words ending in *r*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pesár, <i>Grief</i>	Pesáres, <i>Sorrows</i>
Dolór, <i>Pain</i>	Dolóres, <i>Pains</i>

Words ending in *s*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Diós, <i>God</i>	Dióses, <i>Gods</i>
Mes, <i>a Month</i>	Méses, <i>Months</i>

Words ending in *x*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Carcáx, <i>a Quiver</i>	Carcáxes, <i>Quivers</i>
Relóx, <i>a Clock</i>	Relóxes, <i>Clocks</i>

Words ending in *z*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Paz, <i>Peace</i>	Páces, <i>Peaces</i>
Juéz, <i>a Judge</i>	Juéces, <i>Judges</i> .

Examples

*Examples of declining the three several Genders.**Example of the Masculine Gender.**Sing.*

Nom. El Pádre, *the Father*
Gen. Del Pádre, *of the Father*
Dat. Al Pádre, or pára el Pádre, *to the Father*
Accus. Al or El Pádre, *the Father*
Voc. O Pádre, *O Father*
Abl. Del Pádre, *from the Father*

Plur.

Nom. Los Pádres, *the Fathers*
Gen. De los Pádres, *of the Fathers*
Dat. A los Pádres, or pára los Pádres, *to the Fathers*
Acc. Los Pádres, *the Fathers*
Voc. O Pádres, *O Fathers*
Abl. De los Pádres, *from the Fathers*

*Example of the Feminine Gender.**Sing.*

Nom. La Mádre, *the Mother*
Gen. De la Mádre, *of the Mother*
Dat. A la Mádre, *to the Mother*
Acc. La Mádre, *the Mother*
Voc. O Mádre, *O Mother*
Abl. De la Mádre, *from the Mother*

Plur.

Nom. Las Mádres, *the Mothers*
Gen. De las Mádres, *of the Mothers*
Dat. A las Mádres, *to the Mothers*
Acc. Las Mádres, *the Mothers*
Voc. O Mádres, *O Mothers*
Abl. De las Mádres, *from the Mothers*

*Example of the Neuter Gender.**Sing.*

Nom. Lo bueno, *that which is good*
Gen. De lo bueno, *of that which is good*
Dat. A lo bueno, *to that which is good*
Acc. Lo bueno, *that which is good*
Voc. O bueno, *O that which is good*
Abl. De lo bueno, *from that which is good.*

These Adjectives used as Substantives have, as has been said before, no Plural Number.

Common Adjectives are declined as Substantives, according to their Genders, and therefore there needs no Examples of them.

Some

Some observations concerning derived and compound Nouns.

THE Nouns of dignity given to Men, are some of them Substantives, and others Adjectives; the nature of Substantives requires, that they be not given to women, who are possessed of the like dignity, without deriving the Feminine from the Masculine; and thus from *Dúque*, a Duke is deriv'd *Duquesa*, a Duchess; from *Conde*, an Earl, *Condesa*, a Countess; from *Príncipe*, a Prince, *Princesa*, a Princess; because *Príncipe* in Spanish is of the Masculine Gender. But when the Name of Dignity is a Noun Adjective, as *Teniente*, a Lieutenant, or a Deputy; *Asistente*, an Assistant; *Presidente*, a President, it serves both Sexes without any Variation; for in speaking of a President's Lady, she is not to be called *la Presidenta*, but *la Presidente*; and so in the rest of that sort.

They are guilty of the like Error who speaking of a wild, or mountain She-Goat, call her *Cabra monteza*, because the Adjective *Montés* shews both Genders, and therefore the Female is to be called *Montés*, as well as the Male. However the Adjectives that denote Kingdoms, or Nations, ending in *es*, are only applied to the Masculine Gender, and the Feminine has the addition of *a*, as in speaking of a *Frenchman*, or an *Englishman*, he is called *Francés*, or *Inglés*, but a Woman of those Nations is *Francesa*, or *Inglesa*.

C H A P. II.

Of Pronouns.

PRONOUNS are certain words put into the place, or substituted instead of Nouns, serving to

60 *The RUDIMENT S of*
to shew, or express the person, or thing before
named, without naming it over again.

There are several sorts of Pronouns, some of
them are called Primitives, as *yó*, I, *tu*, you, *si*,
himself, *nos*, or *nosótr os*, we; *vos*, or *vosótr os*, ye.

Others are Derivatives, or Possessives, because de-
rived from those above, and denoting possession, as
mío, mine, *túyo*, thine, *súyo*, his, *nuéstro*, ours,
vuéstro, yours; with their feminine gender, *mía*,
túya, *súya*, *nuéstra*, *vuéstra*. It is to be observ'd,
that these pronouns, of the singular number when
placed before substantives, always lose their last
syllable, and for *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, must be said, *mi*,
tu, *su*, as *mi Pádre*, my Father; *tu Mádre*, your
Mother; *su Avuélo*, his Grandfather. But when a
question is asked, then the answer must be *mío*,
túyo, or *súyo*, as *cúyo es éste guánte?* whose glove is
that? The answer is *mío*, mine, or *túyo*, yours, or
súyo, his. When they are absolute, or taken as
neuter, then they have the article *lo* before, as *lo*
mío, that which is mine; *lo túyo*, that which is
thine, &c. The same is practised in the feminine
gender.

To form the plural number of these pronouns
mío, *túyo*, *súyo*, or *mi*, *tu*, *su*, add the Letter *s*,
as was before said in the nouns, and you have *míos*,
túyos, *súyos*, *mis*, *tus*, and *sus*.

There are also demonstrative pronouns, as *éste*,
ésta, *ésto*, This; *ésse*, *éssa*, *ésto*, that; and *el*, *élla*,
éll o, he, she, that, *éste*, *ésta*, *ésse*, *éssa*, and *el* are
always placed before nouns, as *éste libro*, this book,
éssa carne, that flesh; but *ésto*, *ésto* and *éll o*, are
spoken absolutely, without being joined to any
noun; *ésto*, signifying this thing; *ésto*, that thing;
and *éll o*, the thing.

The particles making the cases in declining, when
they come before these pronouns beginning with *e*,
are not always contracted, and it may be said *de*
este, or *deste*, *de esto*, or *desto*.

The

The relative pronouns are, *qual*, which, *quién*, who, *qué*, what.

For declining of pronouns, see the following examples.

The pronoun of the first person *Yo* is thus declin'd.

Sing.

Plur.

<i>Nom.</i> Yo, <i>I</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Nos, or Nosotros, <i>We</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De mi, <i>Of me</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De nos, or de nosotros, <i>Of us</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A mi, <i>To me</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A nos, or a nosotros, <i>To us</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Me, or a mi, <i>Me</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Nos, or nosotros, <i>Us</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De mi, <i>From me</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De nos, or de nosotros, <i>From us.</i>

The second person *Tu* is thus declined:

<i>Nom.</i> Tu, <i>You</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Vos, or vosotros, <i>Ye</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De ti, <i>Of you</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De vos, or vosotros, <i>Of ye</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A ti, <i>To you</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A vos, or vosotros, <i>To ye</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Te, or a ti, <i>You</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Vos, or vosotros, <i>Ye</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De ti, <i>From you</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De vos, or vosotros, <i>From ye</i>

The third person *Si* thus:

Sing.

<i>Gen.</i> De si, <i>Of himself,</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A si, <i>To himself,</i>
<i>Accus.</i> Se, or a si, <i>Himself.</i>
<i>Ablat.</i> De si, <i>From himself.</i>

And has no plural number, nor feminine gender, unless *mismo* be added to it for the masculine, and then *mísma* must be for the feminine, and then it has *mismos* and *mismas* in the plural.

These pronouns in the singular number serve both the masculine and the feminine genders, as does *nos* and *vos* in the plural ; but *nosotros* and *vosotros* are masculine, and the feminine is made by turning the last *o* into *a*, that is, instead of *nosotros* say *nosotras*, and instead of *vosotros* *vosotras*.

The

The Spaniards frequently in speech and writing use this pronoun *nos* with the first person plural of the imperative mood, taking away the *s* from the verb, as *vámonos*, for *vámos nos*, let us go ; *déxémonos*, for *déxemos nos*, let us leave ; and so they do of *vos*, losing the *v*, as *ídgos*, let ye go, instead of *íduos*, or losing *d* in the second person plural, as *amáos*, let ye love, instead of *amádos*, or *amáduos*.

It is proper to observe, that the genitive case of these pronouns, seems to be in a manner superfluous, as never in use ; for if we are to speak by way of possession, we must not say *el libro es de mi*, which would be in *English*, the book is of me, but instead thereof, we must use the word, *mío*, viz. *el libro es mío*, the book is mine. So *el cavállo es de ti*, is not *Spanish*, and would signify, the horse is of you ; but it must be *el cavállo es tuyo*, the horse is your's ; and lastly, *el sáyo es de si*, is as false, being the Coat is of him, but it must be, *el sáyo es suyo*, or *de u. m^d.* the coat is his. And if the question be asked, *cuya obra es ésta?* whose work is this ? the answer must be, *mía*, mine, or *tuya*, yours, or *suya*, his.

These pronouns serve after a verb, which is then rather in the ablative, than the genitive case, as *que se dirá de mi?* what will be said of me ? *que será de ti?* what will become of you ? *el bábla de si*, he talks of himself.

The possessives *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, mine, thine, his, and *mi*, *tu*, *su*, my, your, his, as also, *nuestro*, and *vuestro*, need not be declined here, all of them following the same rule, without any variation.

The three pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *el*, are used in composition with the word *mismo*, signifying itself, as *yo mismo*, I myself, *tu mismo*, you yourself, *el mismo*, he himself ; where it is to be noted that *el mismo*, also signifies the same, but then *el* is the article *the*. These three are declined as before, only that the *mismo* has a singular and a plural number, and

therefore we must say, *yo mismo*, *tu mismo*, and *el mismo*, in the singular, and *nosotros mismos*, *vosotros mismos*, and *ellos mismos*, in the plural; and so *mismo* and *mismos* for the masculine gender, and *misma* and *mismas* for the feminine.

The pronouns possessive are *Mío*, *Túyo*, *Súyo*, *Nuestro*, *Vuestro*, and the feminine gender of them *Mia*, *Tuya*, *Suya*, *Nuestra*, *Vuestra*; but if placed before the substantive, then it must be *Mi*, *Tu*, *Su*, and in the plural *Mis*, *Tus*, *Sus*. It is proper also here to speak of the pronoun of interrogation, *Cuyo*, in the masculine, and *Cuya*, in the feminine gender, and *Cuyos* and *Cuyas*, in the plural number, which always denotes the genitive. To explain the proper use of these words, take these examples: Asking the question, *Cuyo es éste caballo?* that is *de quien es éste caballo?* Whose Horse is this? The answer is, *Mío*, mine, *Túyo*, yours, *Súyo*, his; and so in the feminine gender, only changing the *o* into *a*, as *cuya*, *mía*, &c. and in the plural number adding *s*, as *cuyos* or *cuyas*, &c.

Note, That *Cuyo* is likewise relative, as *el Rey*, *en cuya Mano está el bacér bien*, &c. the King in whose Hand or Power is, to do good, &c. *éste réo*, *cuyos delitos son grandes*, &c. This guilty person whose crimes are great, &c.

The Demonstratives *Éste*, *Ésse*, *Aquél*, *El*.

E'STE, This, as *éste Hombre*, this Man, *Ésse Caballo*, that Horse; *aquél* is also *that*, but yet with this difference, that *éste* signifies *that* which is near to the person who is spoken to, whereas *aquél* denotes *that* which is neither near him who is spoken to, nor him who speaketh.

These pronouns are thus declined :

Sing.	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i> éste		ésta	ésto	<i>This</i>
<i>Gen.</i> déste, or de éste	désta, or de ésta		désto, or de ésto	<i>Of this</i>
<i>Dat.</i> a éste	a ésta		a ésto	<i>To this</i>
<i>Acc.</i> éste, or a éste	esta, or a ésta		esto, or a ésto	<i>This</i>
<i>Abl.</i> déste, or de éste	désta, or de ésta		désto, or de ésto.	<i>From this</i>

Plur.	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>No Neut.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i> éstos		éstas		<i>These</i>
<i>Gen.</i> déstos, or de éstos	déstas, or de éstas			<i>Of these</i>
<i>Dat.</i> a éstos	a éstas			<i>To these</i>
<i>Acc.</i> éstos, or a éstos	éstas, or a éstas			<i>These</i>
<i>Abl.</i> déstos, or de éstos	déstas, or de éstas.			<i>From these</i>

Este, ésta, ésto, is declined in the same manner, the plural number being *éstos, éstas*. The like of *Aquel, Aquella, Aquellos, Aquellas*.

So is *el, he, ella, she, ello, the or that thing, ellos, they, masculine, ellas, they, feminine*. There is no neuter plural. The cases need not to be repeated, being the same as those before. The word *otro*, is often joined to *este, or ésta*, as *Esotro, or Esseotro*, the other Man or Thing; *Esotra, or Esseotra*, the other Woman.

There are two other pronouns, which have only a plural number, as signifying two, which are *ámbos*, and *entrámbos*, both. To the first of them is often added *a dos*, that is, *Ambos a dos*, both together, and *Entrámbos*, imports much the same. Note, that of *este, and ésta*, is made *aqueste, aquésta*, this or that very Man. And so in the feminine and neuter gender.

The relatives, *Quién*, *Que*, *Qual*.

QUIEN, is either interrogative, or relative, as *Quién lo dice?* Who says it? *No bái quién lo fúfra*, no Man can endure it.

Qué, is also interrogative, and relative, as *Qué es ésto?* What is that? *El bómbr que yo digo*, The Man I speak of.

Qual, signifies Which, as *Qual déllos?* which of them? To this is sometimes added *el*, for the masculine, *la* for the feminine, and *lo* for the neuter, as *el qual*, *la qual*, *lo qual*.

The declining of these consisting only in the addition of the articles, it is needless to run the same over again; only it must be observed, that *Que* has no plural number, as signifying What, which is incapable of it; and yet *Quién* and *Qual*, though they signify *Who*, and *Which*, have a plural, which is *Quiénes*, and *Quáles*, as *Quiénes son aquéllos?* Who are those? and *Quáles son los que dices?* What sort of people are those you speak of, or what are they?

El, is frequently joined to *Qual*, which we cannot so properly express in *English*, as signifying *Who*; but *lo qual*, is expressed, the which, these two conjoined are declined as follows?

Sing. <i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> <i>El qual</i>	<i>la qual</i>	<i>lo qual</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <i>del qual</i>	<i>de la qual</i>	<i>de lo qual</i>
<i>Dat.</i> <i>al qual</i>	<i>a la qual</i>	<i>a lo qual</i>
<i>Acc.</i> <i>el qual</i> , or <i>al qual</i>	<i>la qual</i> , or <i>a la qual</i>	<i>lo qual</i> , or <i>a lo qual</i>
<i>Abl.</i> <i>del qual</i>	<i>de la qual</i>	<i>de lo qual</i>

Plur. Masc.	Fem.	No Neuter.
<i>Nom.</i> los quáles	las quáles	
<i>Gen.</i> de los quáles	de las quáles,	
<i>Dat.</i> a los quáles	a las quáles	
<i>Acc.</i> los quáles, or (a los quáles)	las quáles, or a las (quáles)	
<i>Abl.</i> de los quáles	de las quáles	

When the word *Quiéra*, is added to *Quién*, or *Qual*, it quite alters the meaning, so *Quienquiéra* signifies any person, or man whatsoever ; and *Qualquiéra*, is any one, whether man, or woman, or other thing. When *que* is added to *tal* thus, *que tal*, then stands for *quál* in Spanish.

Of the Reciprocals, or Relatives, me, te, se.

THESE three are only of the dative and accusative Cases, and have always a verb either before, or after them, as *Díme quién éres?* Tell me who you are? *Dóite el Parabién?* I give you Joy. *Fuése de aquí*, He went away from hence. They are also placed before verbs, as, *Pédro me dixo*, Peter told me. *Juán te dará*, John will give you. *El se alába*. He praises himself. Many other examples might be brought wherein these pronouns are variously used ; but those things are better learnt by practice, than set down as rules.

Mi, ti, si, before spoken of as genitive Cases, the first two of *yo*, and *tu*, and the third without a proper nominative, are often join'd to the word *con*, with, and the syllable *go*, added to it, thus *Conmigo*, with me ; *Contigo*, with you ; *Conigo*, with himself. They have no variation for the genders, but serve both the masculine, and the feminine.

Note, That *proprio* stands often for *mísmo*, as *yo proprio*, or *yo mísmo*, *tu proprio*, &c.

The possessive *su*, and in plural *sus*, stands for his, her's, their, &c. as *el Rey con su Hijo el Príncipe*, the King with his Son the Prince; *la Reina con su hija la Princesa*, the Queen with her Daughter the Princess.

Los subditos deben obedecer, y pagár tributo à su Rey, the Subjects ought to obey, and pay tribute to their King.

El General comió con sus oficiales subalternos, the General dinned with his subaltern Officers.

Su stands also for *el*, or *la*, as *el hombre tiene su ser* (*el ser*) *de Dios*, Man has the being from God. *Su firma del capitán*, *su* for *la*; but to speak properly, read always *el ser*, the being; *la firma*, the sign, or one's name.

Add to these

The imperfect Pronouns, or properly these Nouns relatives: *Cierto*, certain; *úno*, one; *algúno*, *alguien*, somebody, or *algo* in neuter, something; *cadaúno*, each, every body; *nádie*, no body (these two last mentioned have no plural) *otro*, other; *sólo*, alone; *tódo*, all; *tal*, such; *tanto*, so much; *quanto*, how much. And the two *unique* words *fuláno* and *zutáno*, such a one. Note, That these are called by *Salv. Náves*, pronouns *indefinites*.

There are three persons in the Pronouns, viz.

Sing.

1. *Yo, I*
2. *Tu, Thou*
3. *El, or aquél, he*

Plur.

nos, or nosótros, we
vos, or vosótros, ye
éllos, or aquéllos; they

C H A P. III.

Of VERBS.

A Verb is a part of speech, that signifies to be, to do, or to suffer, as *ser hombre*, to be a Man; *ámo*, I love; *soí amado*, I am loved: It is conjugated through Moods and Tenses; by Moods the Verb is changed according to the circumstances, as *yo báblo*, I speak, is the indicative; *bábla tu*, speak thou, the imperative, &c. Tenses are the distinction and variety of times, as *venía*, I was coming; *vine*, I came, &c.

Verbs are divided into personals, (so called because they have persons) as *yo ámo*, I love; *tu ámas*, thou lovest, &c. and impersonals, (because without persons) as *conviene*, it behoveth, *consta* it is plain.

The personals are subdivided into

Active	Neuter
Passive	Reciprocal.

Active signifies to do, as *enseñár*, to teach; *leér*, to read; and may be made passive by the auxiliary Verb *ser*, and the participle passive of the Verb, as *ser enseñado*, *soí enseñado*, &c.

Passive signifies to suffer, as *soí amado*. But note, That in the third person singular, and the third of the plural are conjugated not only with the auxiliary *ser*, but even with the particle *se*, as *Diós es amado*, or *Diós se áma*, God is beloved. *Buéno es que la virtud séa ballada*, or *se bálle en un Príncipe*, it is good that Virtue be found in a Prince. *Que los Buénos séan amados*, or *se ámen*, that the virtuous

virtuous may be loved. By which you may see, that the participle Passive is varied in the conjugation of this Verb, saying, *Yo soy amado, nosotros somos amados.*

Neuter properly is that which signifies neither action nor passion, as *colorár*, to colour; *coloreár*, to recover a colour, or to give colour; *corrér*, to run, *assentir*, to assent. This Verb makes a perfect sense by itself, in which it differs from the active, as *duérmo*, I sleep, *niéva*, it snows.

The verb *Active* says the same thing in the active and passive voices, as *yo amo à dios*, or *dios es amado de mi*, which can't be said by the Neuter in a proper manner.

The Neuter is either substantive, as *ser*, to be; or absolute (so called for its making a sense by itself) by action, as *blasphemár*, to blaspheme, *llueve*, it rains; or by passion, as *coloreár*, *ennegrecér*.

The verb reciprocal is that which return the sense backward, and is conjugated thus, *apercibirse*, to be prepared or provided for, *me apercibo*, I prepare myself, *te apercibes*, thou preparest thyself; and always has the particle *se* in the infinitive.

Note, That in the Spanish language, one Verb may be made *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, and *reciprocal* by the different senses that it may be applied to it, as *acostár*, to put one in it's bed, is active, and is made passive by the Verb *auxiliár* *estár*, and the participle passive, as *estoi acostado*, I am put in my bed, or I lay down. When it signifies to follow one's party, or opinion, or to declare himself partial for a Prince, is *Neuter*, as *Pédro, dexado el servicio de Francia, por proméssas de adelantamiento acostó à la parte de España.* Peter having left the French service, by the promises he had on his being promoted, enlisted himself in the Spanish service. And when it signifies to come near to a place, as *acostarse aqui*, to come near to this place, then is reciprocal, as *si te acuéstas aqui*,

70 *The RUDIMENTS of*
aqui, te mataré, if you come near to this place, I
will kill you.

Some of the Verbs are regular, (so called for their being confined to rules) and others irregular (so called, because they have no rule); but as their irregularity is various some time in the present tense of the indicative, in the preterperfect, future, in the imperative, preter imperfect and future of the optative, and otherwise in their participles, I shall take care to mention it in the Conjugations.

Of Conjugations.

TH E R E are three Conjugations in the Spanish Tongue, viz.

1. in <i>ár</i>	as	<i>Amár, to love</i>
2. in <i>ér</i>		
3. in <i>ír</i>		

So that the Spanish Verbs are to be looked for in the Dictionaries by their infinitives.

Of Moods.

TH E Moods are six, as in *Latin*, viz. The *Indicative*, or that which shows, or declares; the *Imperative*, or that which commands; *Optative*, or that which wishes, or desires; *Subjunctive*, which supposes something; *Potential*, or that by which something is expected; and the *Infinitive*, which leaves all undetermined.

Of Tenses.

TH E Tenses, which are the times of action, or passion, are three properly, being the present, the past, and the time to come: And with those

those made by circumlocution are ten in the indicative Mood, *viz.* the present, preterimperfect, three preterperfects, the plus perfect, and four futures: And in the optative Mood there are nine, *viz.* the present, three preterimperfects, preterperfect, two preter plus perfects, and two futures.

Of the Indicative Mood.

THE Present Tense of all Conjugations of regular verbs, is formed by changing *ar*, *er*, or *ir* of the infinitive into *o*, as from *amár* say *ámo*, from *leér*, *léo*, from *cumflir*, *cúmple*; this tense extends itself to a future time, as *mañána es dia de fiesta*, to-morrow is a holy day.

The Preterimperfect of the first Conjugation is formed by changing *ár* into *ába*, as *amába*, I did love, or properly I was loving; and of the second and third Conjugation, is formed by changing *ér* and *ír* into *ía*, as *perdía*, *pedía*.

Note, That this Tense has two ways of explaining the second person plural through all Conjugations, as *amábadeis* or *amábais*; *perdiádeis* or *perdiáis*; *pediadéis* or *pedíais*.

The first Preterperfect of the first Conjugation by changing *ár* into *é*, as *amár*, *amé*; but of the second and third Conjugations by changing *ér* and *ír* into *í*, as *perdér*, *perdí*, *pedír*, *pedí*. This tense is called *Definite*, because it is a time perfectly past and expressed; as *el mes pasado bable con el*, I spoke with him last month.

The second Perfect of all the Conjugations is formed of the auxiliar verb *bavér*, and the participle passive of the verb treated of, as *bé bablado*, I have spoken, *bé perdido*, I have lost; *be pedido*, I have asked.

The third Perfect is formed in the same manner, as *búve bablado*, &c. but not so frequently used in Spanish as the other two.

Note, That these two latter are called Preterperfects indefinites, for their time is not determined, as *le be bablado*, I have spoken to him, but we don't say when.

So that the difference between the first preterperfect and the others, is that the former should express time, and the latter not ; besides, that the first extends itself farther than the others (which are referred to time but lately past) you may say, *le hablé dos años ba*, I spoke to him two years ago ; but you can't say *le be bablado dos años bá*, I have spoken to him two years ago ; because *be bablado* does only extend to a time so lately past, that it appears to have something of the present. These are *Valéra's* Observations, which I advise the Reader to observe, in order to avoid the frequent Equivocations that often happens in speaking and writing.

The Preterplusperfect thus : *había bablado* *había perdido*, *había pedido*, I had spoken, lost, &c.

The first Future is formed of the infinitive, adding é after r, as of *bablár*, adding a say *bablaré* ; *perdér*, *perderé* ; *pedir*, *pediré*, having always the accent on the last letter.

The second Future with the auxiliary *bé*, *tengo*, or *débo*, and the infinitive Mood with *de* before it, as *be* or *tengo de dár*, I am to give, *débo de dar*, or *débo dár*, I am oblig'd, I must give.

The third thus : *Havré de bablár*, I shall be obliged to speak, &c.

The fourth (which properly is the second Preterplusperfect) thus : *Había de bablár*, I had, or I was to speak, &c.

Of the Imperative.

THE Imperative is made of the third person of the present of the indicative Mood, and of the present of the optative, as *áma tu*, love thou ; *áma*

áme aquél, let him love ; pierde tu, loose thou ; pierda el, let him loose, &c.

So that the third person of the indicative is the second of the imperative, and the third of the imperative is the first of the optative. The second plural is formed from the infinitive by changing *r* into *d*, of *amár* say *amád*, let ye love ; *perdér*, *perdéd* ; *pedir*, *pedid* ; and often the *d* is lost, saying *amaos* for *amád vos*, or *amád os*, and sometimes is transposed after *l*, as *amálos*, *amáles* for *amádlos*, or *amádles* ; and so it is often said *decilde* for *decidle*.

Of the Optative, Potential, and Subjunctive Moods.

OPTATIVE, or that wishes, or desires, has always annexed an adverb, as *óxala*, *ò si*, *pluguiesse à Diós*, would to God, I pray God, or God grant ; *aunqué*, *no obstante que*, *sin embargo que*, altho', notwithstanding.

Potential properly has no signs in *Spanish*, but in *English* has these, *can*, *may*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*, which are equal to these *Spanish* expressions, *puede ser que*, *es menester que*, as some authors will have it.

Subjunctive has always some conjunction annexed, as *si*, *cómo*, *que*, *cuando* : *if*, *as*, *that*, *when*, as *como yo áme*, as I may love ; but the tenses are all alike in these three Moods.

The present of the Optative is formed by the present of the Indicative changing *o* into *e* in the first conjugation, and into *a* in the second and third conjugations, as, from *ámo* say *áme* ; *pírdo*, *piérda* ; *pído*, *pída*.

The first and second Preterimperfects are formed from the first person of the first preterperfect of the Indicative, as from *amé* in the first conjugation changing *e* into *ára* or *ásse* is made *amára*, *amásse* ; in the second and third conjugations add to the preterperfect

The third Preterimperfect is formed from the infinitive, adding *ía*, as from *amár* say *amaría*, from *leér*, *leeríá*, from *pedír*, *pidiriá*.

Observe here, That these tenses have two ways to explain the second person plural, as *amarádeis* or *amárais*, *amássedeis*, or *amásseis*, *amariádeis*, or *amáriais*, and so in the other two conjugations.

Observe likewise, That these three tenses vary one from another, speaking in a right method ; tho' there is such a confusion in explaining them, that hardly there is any difference made by the Spaniards. Some Authors adapt them to the three Moods, viz. *amára* to the Optative, *amásse*, to the Subjunctive, and *amaría* to the Potential ; as *oxala yo amára la virtud*, God grant that I might love virtue ; *como yo amásse a Diós, el me amaria*, as I could love God, he would love me.

Other Authors, as *Tominque*, *Cessér* in Gram. Rud. and *Villalba*, are of opinion, that *amára* denotes the disposition of a thing, or the readiness for an action; *amásse* the beginning of it, and *amaría* the possibility to obtain it; or as *Terebio*, says the first imperfect is a tense of motion, *ex quo* from whence, and related to the medium, as *de los veinte pesos le diéra diez para comprarse un vestido*, of the twenty pieces of eight I would give him ten, that he might buy himself a suit of cloaths; the second a tense medium, or *in quo*, as *como le ballasse baciendo lo que le díxe*, as I should find him in doing what I told him. And the third a conditional tense, as *si lo baría*, *como el fuera bueno*, I would do it, if he would be good.

One thing is certain amidst all these, that *anque*, *como*, *oxala*, &c. follow the two first preter-imperfects, and the third imperfect tense is used by way of interrogation, or suspension, saying: *baria*

baría v. m^a esto? Would you do this? *O que bien lo baría yo!* O that I could do it well! or with *si*.

The Preterperfect is formed from the auxiliar verb *bavér*, and the participle passive thus; *báya amádo*, *baya perdido*, *báya pedido*, when I have loved, &c.

The first Plusperfect thus: *Húviéra amádo*, when I had loved.

The second, *buviéffe amádo*, when I had loved.

1. Future is made of the first Preterimperfect, by changing *ra* into *re*, as *amára*, *amáre*; *perdiéra*, *perdiére*; *pediéra*, *pidiére*, with the same accent on all the syllables.

2. Future of the first Plusperfect by changing *ra* into *re*, and participle passive, as from *búviéra amádo*, say in the future *búviére amádo*. So that there are nine tenses in the Optative Mood, as well as in the Subjunctive and Potential.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

INFINITIVE signifieth to do, to suffer, or to be; and hath neither number, nor person, nor nominative Case before as *amár*, to love; *perdér*, to loose; *pedir*, to ask, to beg.

When two Verbs come together without any nominative Case between them, then the latter shall be in the infinitive Mood, as *deseo aprender*, I desire to learn: And often times the infinitive supplies the nominative case, as *amár à Diós*, and *bacer bien al Próximo*, *son los dos actos Principales de un Christiano*, to love God, and do good to the Neighbour, are the two principal Actions of a Christian.

When *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*, are added to the infinitive, then *r* is often changed into *l*, as *amérle* for *amárle*, *perdélle* for *perderle*, *decílle* for *decírle*, to love him, to loose him, to tell him. And when *me*, *te*, *se*, *nos*, *os*, &c. follow the infinitive immediately, then they are pronounced as monosyllables, as *decírle*, *decírselos*, &c.

76 The RUDIMENTS of
A general Scheme of the Termination of Verbs of the
three Conjugations in their simple Tenses.

Infinitive Mood.

Pref. Ten.	1. ár	Ger.	ándo	Par.	ádo	
and	2. ér		éndo		ido	
Pret. imp.	3. ír		iéndo	ya	ido	had.

The Termination of Verbs of the three Conjugations in their compound Tenses.

	<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>
Persons	yo tu el I, thou, he		nos. vos. ellas we, ye, they,
2. pre. per.	1. hé, hás, { ádo 2. ha { 2 3. { 3 ido <i>I have, &c.</i>		hém̄os or havéis, han { ádo havémos { 2 ido 3
3. perf.	1. húve, { ádo 2. húviste, { 2 3. húvo { 3 ido <i>I had, &c.</i>		huvímos, huvísteis { ádo huvieron { 2 ido 3
plusper.	1. havía, { ádo 2. havías, { 2 3. havía { 3 ido <i>I am to</i>		havíamos, { havíadeis, { ádo { havíais { 2 ido havian { 3
2. futu.	1. he or tengo { ár 2. has, há de { ér 3. { ir <i>I must, or shall be obliged to</i>		hemos, havéis, han de { ér { ir
3. futu.	1. havré, { ár 2. havras, { ér 3. havrá de { ir <i>I bad, or I was to</i>		havrémos, havréis, { ár havrán de { ér ir
4. futu.	1. havía, { ár 2. havías, { ér 3. havía de { ir.		haviámos, { haviadeis, { ár { havíais, { ér havian de { ir

Persons

Persons	yo	tu	el	nosotros, vosotros, ellos
	I,	thou,	he	we,
	might	or could		ye,
	have,	&c.		they
	Pre. { 1. } háya,	{ 2. } háyas,	{ 3. } háya	ádo { 2. } ído { 3. }
	I bad,	&c.		
	1. plusp. { 1. } haviéra,	{ 2. } huvieras	{ 3. } haviéra	ádo { 2. } ído { 3. }
	I bad,	&c.		
	2. plusp. { 1. } huviéssse	{ 2. } ésses	{ 3. } ésse	ádo { 2. } ído { 3. }
	shall	or will		
Potential Mood.	1. futur. { 1. } huviére,	{ 2. } éres,	{ 3. } ére	ádo { 2. } ído { 3. }
	I bad,	&c.		
	2. futur. { 1. } huviéremos,	{ 2. } éremos,	{ 3. } éren.	ádo { 2. } ído { 3. }
	I bad,	&c.		
	3. futur. { 1. } huviésssemos,	{ 2. } ésssemos,	{ 3. } éssen.	ádo { 2. } ído { 3. }
	shall	or will		
	3. futur. { 1. } huviéramos,	{ 2. } éramos,	{ 3. } éran.	ádo { 2. } ído { 3. }
	I bad,	&c.		
	3. futur. { 1. } huviéramos,	{ 2. } éramos,	{ 3. } éran.	ádo { 2. } ído { 3. }
	I bad,	&c.		

Infinitive.

Pret. perf.	{ 1. } havé	{ 2. } ido	havi-	ádo
and	{ 2. } ido	to have, &c.	endo	2. ido
Plusperf.	{ 3. }		erha-	3. ido
			viens-	ár
Future	{ 1. }	ár	do	ér
	{ 2. } havér de	{ 3. } ir	de	ir
Supine	{ 1. }	ár		
	{ 2. } à { 3. } ir			

Observations on the Verbs.

THE regular and irregular Verbs, generally speaking, agree in this, that the first Futures of the Indicative Mood, and that of the Optative are always the same through out all the Conjugations, with this difference, that the first has the accent on the last syllable, and the second in the *ante penultima*.

When

When the first Preterperfect of the indicative is irregular, the first and second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

<i>dár</i> , to give ;	<i>tenér</i> , to have, or hold,	<i>decir</i> , to say.
Pret. Perf.	Pret. imperf. opt.	Future.
<i>di</i> , I give	<i>diéra</i> , or <i>diéssle</i> ,	<i>diére</i> , when I shall give. <i>I might give.</i>
<i>túve</i> , I had	<i>tu viéra</i> , or <i>tu viéssle</i> ,	<i>tu viére</i> , when I shall have. <i>that I might have.</i>
<i>dixe</i> , I said	<i>dixéra</i> , or <i>dixéssle</i>	<i>dixére</i> , when I shall say. <i>that I might say.</i>

The third Preterimperfect of the Optative is always the same, and ends in *ría*, as *daría*, *tendría*, *diría* for *deciría*.

Note, Likewise, that generally the third person singular of the present tense of the Indicative Mood, is the second person of the Imperative, and the third of the Imperative is the first of the Optative, as *aquel áma*, he loveth ; *áma tu*, love thou ; *áme aquel*, let him love ; *que yo áme*, that I may love.

There are few exceptions in the Imperative, as from *ponér*, *tenér*, *bacér*, *decir*, &c. say *pon tu* instead of *pone tu*, *ten tu* for *tiéne tu*, *báz* for *bace*, but this is in use, *dí tu*, or *dice tu*, &c.

Of the Participle.

A Participle is a part of a speech, it comes from the verb, and participates its force, that is, has the same signification, and governs the cause of the verb ; it taketh of a Noun the gender, case, and declension ; and of both, number and figure.

In Spanish there are four Participles, as in Latin, viz. of the

	Latin	Spanish.
Pret. Tense in	{ <i>ans</i> as <i>amans</i> ; <i>ens</i> as <i>audiens</i> ;	{ <i>amante</i> , loving, who loves <i>oyénte</i> , hearing, who does hear.

N. B.

N. B. That this Participle is likewise supplied in the *Spanish* language by the third person of the present tense of the indicative Mood, the relative *el* and *que*, as *el que áma*, he who does love ; it governs generally in *Spanish* a genitive, as *amante de Dios* ; and is of the gender of common of three, as *el amante, la amante, lo amante*.

	<i>Latin</i>		<i>Spanish</i>
Of the pret.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{tus} \quad \text{amatus} \\ \text{or} \quad \text{in} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{sus} \quad \text{visus} \\ \text{xus} \quad \text{connexus} \end{array} \right. \end{array} \right.$	do	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{amado, loved,} \\ \text{in to} \quad \text{as} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{visto, seen,} \\ \text{xo, \&c.} \quad \text{connexo, \&c.} \end{array} \right. \end{array} \right.$
Passive			$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{join'd or added.} \end{array} \right.$

	<i>Latin</i>		<i>Spanish</i>
Of the future	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{in} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{rus} \quad \text{futurus} \\ \text{venturus} \end{array} \right. \end{array} \right.$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{uro} \\ \text{in éro, as} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{futuro} \\ \text{venturo} \end{array} \right. \left. \begin{array}{l} \text{which} \\ \text{is to} \end{array} \right.$

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{&c.} \\ \text{venidéro, \&c.} \end{array} \right\} \text{come.}$

Note, That this Participle is supplied in *Spanish* by the auxiliar verb *bávr*, or by *tenér*, with the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the verb, as *amaturus fueram, bavia de amár*, I had to love ; *tengo, or be de amár*, I am to love, &c.

Of Fut. in $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{dus as Amandus :} \\ \text{dus as Amandus :} \end{array} \right.$ But this in *Spanish* is supplied by the auxiliar Verbs *bávr* and *sér*, the particle *de*, and the participle of the preter of the Verb, as *Amandus est, bá de sér amado*, he is to be loved, &c.

Gerunds.

The Gerunds are terminated in *Spanish* in $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ando as amando, loving,} \\ \text{endo as oyendo, bearing,} \end{array} \right.$

And govern the case of the Verb, as *amando a Dios, loving God* : The Gerund of genitive is formed of the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the Verb thus, *de amar*, of loving ; and that of accusative thus, *à amar*, to love.

Supines.

SUPINES.

TH E R E are two Supines in *Spanish*, by way of circumlocution, one active, as à *amár*, to love; the other passive, as à *ser amádo*, to be loved.

This, it is hoped, will be sufficient to bring the Reader into the knowledge of every thing required for the conjugation of verbs; as for the rest, we refer him to the third part of this Grammar, where under their proper heads he will find every thing necessary for the construction.

PERSONS.

TH E R E are also in Verbs three Persons in both numbers, *viz.*

Sing.	yo <i>I</i> tu, <i>thou</i> , el, or aquél <i>he</i>	as { yo ámo, <i>I love</i> tu ámas, <i>thou lovest</i> aquel áma, <i>he loveth</i> .
Plur.	nos, or nosótros, <i>we</i> vos, or vosótros, <i>ye</i> ellos, or aquéllos, <i>they</i>	as { nosótros amámos, <i>we love</i> vosótros amáis, <i>ye love</i> aquellos aman, <i>they love</i> .

By the first person, we note, he who speaks; by the second, to whom we speak; and by the third, the person of whom we speak.

N. B. That the *Spaniards* very seldom make use of the second Person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends; when they speak to God, wife and husband to themselves, to children, or servants; instead thereof, when they speak to others, they make use of *Usted* in singular, or *Ustedes* in plural, or of *Vuestra Mercéd*, and *Vuestras Mercedes*, *you*, your Worship, your Merits, or Deservings; which are signs of the third person, of which they make use of in speaking: In writing they do always make use of

Obſerve here, that when an adjective comes after *Vueſtra Merced*, it does not agree in the gender with *v. m^d.*, but with the person to whom we speak, or ſpoke of ; when to a Man, thus *Vueſtra Merced ſea bién venido*, you are welcome : when to a Woman, thus, *Vueſtra Merced ſea bien venida*, you are welcome, and ſo in the plural. It can't be amiss, if at preſent I take notice of

*The manner uſed by the Spaniards in ſaluting or
complimenting one another.*

THEY make uſe of *Uſted*, or *Vueſtra Merced* in general for persons, or among persons below those of the Nobility and Gentry, as *como eſtá v. m^d.* ? or *como le va a v. m^d.* ? or *como ſe bálla v. m^d.* ? or as newly introduced by ſtrangers, *como ſe porta v. m^d.* ? how do you do, &c. Answer, *Mui bién pár a ſervirle*, (or *pár a ſervír a v. m^d.*) or *Buéno* (that is *enſalud*) *para que me mánde*, &c. *Caballéro buénos días* (that is, *éſte y ótros mas*) *ténga v. m^d.*, Good morrow, Sir ; *Buenas nócbes térga v. m^d.*, Good Night to you, Sir ; it is uſed in Spanish *buen día tenga v. m^d.*, but not *Buéna nócbe* in singular.

Béſo las Mános de v. m^d., I kiss your Hands ; answer, *T' yo las (ſup. Mános) de v. m^d.*

For *v. m^d.* *me ága* (or *ágame*) *la Mercéd*, or *favór de éſto*, they ſay generally *v. m^d.* *me la* (viz. *Mercéd*) *ága de éſto*, do me the Favour of this, or grant me the favour, &c.

We uſe to ſay *Buen día*, or *buénos días dé Dios à v. m^d.*, God give you a good Day, for good morrow, Sir, &c. as for the other ranks of persons, we ſay, to the King, *Vueſtra Mageſtád*, Your Maſteſty ; to the Pope, *Santidád*, *Beautitúd*, *Sanctíſſimo Pádre*, *Beatíſſimo Pádre*, Holineſs, Moſt Holie Father (Titles which ſhould be given only to God) ; to a Prince

V. Altéza, your Highness; to a Cardinal, *V. Emi-néncia*, your Eminency; to the Grandees, Dukes, Generals, and Ambassadors *V. Exceléncia*, your Excellency; to a Bishop, *Vuestra Señoría ilustríssima*, your illustrious Lordship; to Earls, Marquesses, *Vuestra Señoría*. Note, That some use *Vuéstra*, and *Vuéssa* promiscuously; but I am of opinion that *Vuéssa* is a word out of use, &c.

I observed, that some of the Nobility in Spain, when they speak to any Gentleman inferior in rank, never did make use of *Béso las Manos de v. m^d.*, but *Servidor de v. m^d.*; and so they say *v. m^d. sea bien venido*, or *bien venido séa el Señor Fuláno*; *buénos días dé Dios al Sr. Fuláno*, &c. And when an inferior spoke to them he would be better off, if he said *Béso las Múnos de V. Señoría*, than saying *Ser-vidór de V. Señoría*; but at present this difference is almost left off, &c.

The preceding Spanish Words are abbreviated thus in writing: *V. Mgd*; *V. Santd*, or *Bcatd*, *SS.* or *BB.* *Pádre*; *V. Alt*; *V. Em*; *V. Exc*; *V. S. il*; *V. S.*; *V. Md*.

Of the Auxiliar Verbs.

AUXILIAR Verbs take their etymology of the Latin *Auxilium*, *Auxilio*, help, so called, because they are wanted, and help to the conjugation of other Verbs. There are auxiliar or helping Verbs in all the living languages, and in the Spanish there are more than in any other, as *podér*, *tenér*, *solér*, *ir*, &c. without which we can't rightly explain the meaning of some tenses; but there are three Principal, viz. *bavér* (instead of whom we do likewise use the Verb *tenér*) to have, *estár* and *sér*, to be; the two first serve for the active, neuter, and reciprocal Verbs; *bavér* serves also for the passive Verbs in their compound

84 *The RUDIMENTS of*
 tenses, as in the Preterperfect, Pluperfect, &c. and
 the Verb *sér* serves for the passive Verbs. And as
 the other Verbs can't be conjugated without these,
 we think it proper to begin by

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb Havér, To have.

The Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>
Yo hé,	<i>I have</i>	<i>Nosótros hémos,</i>
Tu hás,	<i>Thou hast</i>	<i>or havémos,</i>
El or aquél há	<i>He hath</i>	<i>Vosótros havéis,</i> <i>Ellos or aquéllos han,</i>

We have

Ye have

They have

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>
Havía,	<i>I had</i>	<i>Havíamos</i>
Havías	<i>Thou hadst</i>	<i>Havíadeis, or havíais</i>
Havia,	<i>He had</i>	<i>Havían</i>

We bad

Ye bad

They bad

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>
Huve	<i>I have had</i>	<i>Huvímos,</i>
Huviste	<i>Thou hast had</i>	<i>Huvístes,</i>
Hûvo	<i>He hath had</i>	<i>Huviéron,</i>

We have had

Ye have had

They have had

Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Yo hé</i>	<i>Havido,</i>	<i>I have had</i>
	<i>Tu hás</i>		<i>Thou hast had</i>
	<i>El há</i>		<i>He hath had</i>
	<i>Nosótros hémos</i>		<i>We have had</i>
	<i>Vosótros havéis</i>		<i>Ye have had</i>
	<i>Ellos han</i>		<i>They have had</i>

The third Preterperfect thus :

Yo hûve havido

Is in no use in Spanish.

I

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havíz Havías Havia Havíamos	}	Havido,	{ I had had Thou hadst had He had had We had had
Plur.	{ Havíadeis Havian			Ye had had They had had

First Future.

Sing.	{ Havré, Havrás, Havrá, Havrémos	I shall or will have
Plur.	{ Havréis Havrán	You shall or will have
		He shall or will have
		We shall or will have
		Ye shall or will have
		They shall or will have.

The other Futures are

Second, Yo hé de havér	I must have.
Third, Havré de havér	I shall be obliged to have
Fourth, Havia de havér	I was to have

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Hágas tu Háya aquél, or el	Have thou
	{ Hayámos nosótros,	Have we, or let us have
Plur.	{ Havéd vosótros,	Have ye, or let ye have
	Háyan aquéllos or ellos	Have they, or let them have.

The Spaniards use, instead of this Imperative Mood, the Word *Ten*, of *Tengo*, I have or hold; which *Tengo* is often used for this Verb *He*.

This Imperative Mood *Ten*, of *Tengo*, so commonly used for *áyas*, *ayá*, is thus declined :

Sing.	{ Ten tu, Tenga el	Have, or hold thou
		Let him have or hold
Plur.	{ Tengámos nosótros Tenéd vosótros Tengan ellos,	Let us have or hold Do ye have or hold Let them have or hold.

See this Verb among the Irregulars.

Note, The Optative Mood is us'd with these signs, as I have said, *Oxalá*, or *O si*, or *Plugiésse a Dios*, Would to God, I pray God, or God grant. The Potential like the *Latin*, with these signs, *may*, *can*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*; both declined like the Subjunctive following.

Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Háya,</i>	<i>If, or when I may have, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	<i>Háyas</i>	
<i>como</i>	<i>Háya</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hayámos</i>	<i>If, or when We may have, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	<i>Hayáis</i>	
<i>como</i>	<i>Háyan</i>	

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Si, or</i>	<i>Huviéra, huviésse, havría</i>	<i>If, or when I might, could, or should have.</i>
<i>como</i>	<i>Huviéras, huviésses, havrias</i>	
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Huviéra, huviésse, havría</i>	

<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Huviéramos, huviéssemos, havriámos</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	<i>Huviéradeis, huviéssedeis, havriadeis</i>
<i>como</i>	<i>Huviéran, huviéssen, havrián.</i>

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Háya,</i>	<i>If, or when I had, or when I have had.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	<i>Háyas</i>	
<i>como</i>	<i>Háya</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hayámos</i>	<i>If, or when We had, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	<i>Hayáis</i>	
<i>como</i>	<i>Háyan</i>	

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Huviéra, or huviésse</i>	<i>If, or when I bad had, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	<i>Huviéras, or huviésses</i>	
<i>como</i>	<i>Huviéra, or huviésse</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Huviéramos, or huviéssemos</i>	<i>If, or when We bad had, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	<i>Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis</i>	
<i>como</i>	<i>Huviéran, or huviéssen</i>	

First Future.

Sing.	Huviére	}	If, or when I shall have hereafter, &c.
Si, or	Huviéres		
como	Huviére		
Plur.	Huviéremos		
Si, or	Huviéredeis		
como	Huviéren		

Second Future.

Huviére	}	If, or when I shall have had, &c.
Huviéres		
Huviére		
Huviéremos		
Huviéreis		
Huviéren		

or otherwise havé havido.

Infinitive Mood.

Havér	To have.
Haver havido	To have had.
Haver de haver	To have hereafter.
<i>Gerund.</i> Haviendo,	Having.

Participles.

<i>Pres.</i> El que ha	The person who has
<i>Pas.</i> Havido	Had
<i>Supine</i> à havér	To have, in having, &c.

Note. That the Spanish Academy hath changed *havér* into *habér*; but as this innovation is against the practice both of ancient and modern Authors, I thought proper to conjugate and retain *havér*.

The other Auxiliary Verbs Estár, and Ser, To be.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo estóy	}	I am
	Tu estás		
	El está		
Plur.	Nosotros estámos		
	Vosotros estáis		
	Ellos están		

G 4

Thou art
He is
We are
Ye are
They are
Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Yo <i>estábaba</i>	Yo <i>éra</i>	<i>I was</i>
	Tu <i>estabas</i>	Tu <i>éras</i>	<i>Thou w^{ast}</i>
	El <i>estaba</i>	El <i>éra</i>	<i>He was</i>
Plur.	Nosotros <i>estábamos</i>	Nosotros <i>éramos</i>	<i>We were</i>
	Vosotros <i>estabais</i> or estábadeis	Vosotros <i>érais</i> , or éradeis	<i>Ye were</i>
	Ellos <i>estaban</i>	Ellos <i>éran</i>	<i>They were</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Estuve	Fui	<i>I have been</i>
	Estuviste	Fuiste	<i>Thou hast been</i>
	Estuvo	Fué	<i>He hath been</i>
Plur.	Estuvimos	Fuimos	<i>We have been</i>
	Estuvisteis	Fuisteis	<i>Ye have been</i>
	Estuvieron	Fuéreron	<i>They have been</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	He, or <i>huve</i> estádo	He, or <i>huve</i> sido	<i>I have been, &c.</i>
	Has, or <i>huviste</i> estádo	Has, or <i>huviste</i> sido	
	Ha, or <i>húvo</i> estádo	Ha, or <i>húvo</i> sido	
	Havémos, or huvímos estádo	Havémos, or huvímos sido	
Plur.	Havéis, or huvísteis estádo	Havéis, or huvísteis sido	
	Han, or huvieron estádo	Han, or huvieron sido	

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Había estado	Había sido	<i>I had been, &c.</i>
	Habías estado	Habías sido	
	Había estado	Había sido	
	Habíamos estado	Habíamos sido	
Plur.	Habíadeis, or <i>havíais</i> estádo	Habíais, or <i>havíadeis</i> sido	
	Habían estado	Habían sido	

First

First Future.

Sing.	{ Estaré Estarás Estará Estarémos	{ Seré Serás Será Serémos	I shall, or will be, &c.
Plur.	{ Estaréis Estarán	{ Seréis Serán	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or Tengo de estar Has de estar Ha de estar	{ He de ser Has de ser Ha de ser	I must be, &c.
	{ Hemos de estar	{ Hemos de ser	
Plur.	{ Hayéis de estar Han de estar	{ Hayéis de ser Han de ser	

Third Future.

Haveré de estar, or ser I shall be obliged to be

Fourth Future.

Había de estar, or ser I had to be, or I was to be.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Está tu Esté el	{ Se tu Séa el	Be thou Be he Let us be Be ye Let them be.
	{ Estemos nosotros	{ Seámos nosotros	
Plur.	{ Estad vosotros	{ Sed vosotros	
	{ Estén ellos	{ Séan ellos	

Subjunctive

Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Esté	Séa	If, or when I am, &c.
Si, or	Estés	Séas	
como	Esté	Séa	
Plur.	Estémos	Seámos	
Si, or	Estéis	Seáis	
como	Estén	Séan	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	Estuviéra estuviéssse, or estaría	Fuéra, fuéssse, sería	If, or when I was, &c.
Si, or	Estuviéras estuviéssses, or estarias	Fuéras, fuéssses, serías	
como	Estuviéra estuviéssse, or estaría	Fuéra, fuéssse, sería	
Plur.	Estuviéramos estuviéssse- mos, or estariámos	Fuéramos, fuésssemos, seríamos	
Si, or	Estuviéradeis, estuviéssedeis, or estariadeis	Fuéradeis, fuéssedeis, seríadeis	
como	Estuviéran estuviéssen, or estarián	Fuérán, fuéssen, se- rian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Haya estáo	Haya sido	If, or when I have been, &c
Si, or	Hayas estáo	Hayas sido	
como	Haya estáo	Haya sido	
Plur.	Hayámos estáo	Hayamos sido	
Si, or	Hayáis estáo	Hayáis sido	
como	Hayan estáo	Hayan sido	

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssse	éstádo	sido	If, or when I had been, &c.
Si, or	Huviéras, or huviéssses			
como	Huviéra, or huviéssse			
Plur.	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos			
Si, or	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis			
como	Huviérán, or huviéssen			

First

First Future.

Sing.	Estuviére	Fuére	If I shall, or should be, or If, or when I had been, &c.
Si, or	Estuviéres	Fuéres	
como	Estuviére	Fuere	
Plur.	Estuviéremos	Fuéremos	
Si, or	Estuviéredes	Fuéredes	
como	Estuviéren	Fuéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére	When I shall, or should have been, &c. or quando havré estado, or sido.
Si, or	Huviéres	
como	Huviére	
Plur.	Huviéremos	
Si, or	Huviéredes	
como	Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Pres.	Estár,	Sér	To be.
Pret. perf.	Havér estado,	Havér sido,	To have been.
Future	Havér de estar,	Havér de ser,	To be hereafter.
Gerund.	Estando, siendo		Being.

Participles.

Pres.	El que esta, or es,	The Person who is.
Pas.	Estado, Sido,	Been.
Sup.	à estar, à ser	To be in being.

The Optative is the same as the Subjunctive.

BOTH these Verbs *Estár* and *Sér* signify *To be*, the *English* having no word to distinguish between them, and yet they cannot be indifferently used, there being a considerable difference between them, which is, that *Ser* signifies the proper and inseparable Essence of a Thing, denoting the Quality, or Quantity, as *Ser bueno*, to be good; *Ser malo*, to be wicked; *Ser grande*, to be big; *Ser pequeño*, to be little, &c. But *Estár* denotes Place, or some adjunct

adjunct Quality, as *Estár en casa*, to be at home; *Estár bueno*, to be well; *Estár malo*, or *enfermo*, to be sick. For in enquiring after a Man's Health, the Spaniards make use of the word *Estár*, as *como estás?* How do you? The Answer is, *Estoy bueno*, or *malo*. I am well or ill. Though sometimes the Answer is without the Verb, saying only, *bueno*, or *malo*, well or sick; or placing the Verb after the Adjective, as *bueno estoy*, I am well. Where it is to be observed that *bueno* and *malo*, do not signify good and bad, as they do upon other occasions, but well or ill. In short, *estár*, is us'd to express any thing that concerns the affections, or passions of the Soul, as *estoy triste*, I am melancholy, *estoy alegre*, I am merry. So that as has been said *ser* must be used to denote the inseparable Essence, or Being, whereas *estár* implies Accidents, as *El vestido es bueno*, *pero está mal hecho*, the Cloaths are good, but they are ill made; where we see the essential Being of the Thing itself under the word *ser*, or *es*, and the accidental fault of its being ill made under the word *estár*. *Ser* likewise is used to express the condition, or temper of a Man in its nature, as *este hombre es colérico de condicion*, this Man is of a colerick disposition; and *estar* express the fit or action, as *este hombre está colérico*, this Man is actually angry, or is in a colerick fit.

Example of the first Conjugation of Verbs regular in *ar*, as *Revelar*, to reveal, or discover.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo revelo	I reveal.
	Tu revelas	Thou, or you reveal.
	El revela	He reveals.
	Nosotros revelamos	We reveal.
Plur.	Vos revelais	Ye reveal.
	Ellos revelan	They reveal.

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Yo revelaba} \\ \text{Tu revelabas} \\ \text{El revelaba} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I did reveal, or I was revealing.</i> <i>You did reveal.</i> <i>He did reveal.</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Nosotros revelabamos} \\ \text{Vosotros revelabadeis, or} \\ \text{revelabais} \\ \text{Ellos revelaban} \end{array} \right.$	<i>We did reveal.</i> <i>Ye did reveal.</i> <i>They did reveal.</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelé} \\ \text{Revelaste} \\ \text{Reveló} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I revealed.</i> <i>You revealed.</i> <i>He revealed.</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelamos} \\ \text{Revelasteis} \\ \text{Revelaron} \end{array} \right.$	<i>We revealed.</i> <i>Ye revealed.</i> <i>They revealed.</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{He, or húve} \\ \text{Has, or huviste} \\ \text{Ha, or húvo} \\ \text{Havemos, or huvimos} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelado,} \\ \text{Revelado,} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I have revealed</i> <i>Thou hast revealed</i> <i>He hath revealed</i> <i>We have revealed</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havéis, or huvisteis} \\ \text{Han, or huvieron} \end{array} \right.$		<i>Ye have revealed</i> <i>They have revealed.</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havia} \\ \text{Havias} \\ \text{Havia} \\ \text{Haviamos} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelado,} \\ \text{Revelado,} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I had revealed</i> <i>Thou badst revealed</i> <i>He had revealed</i> <i>We had revealed</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Haviadeis} \\ \text{Havian} \end{array} \right.$		<i>Ye had revealed</i> <i>They had revealed.</i>

First

First Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelaré,} \\ \text{Revelarás,} \\ \text{Revelará,} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ shall or will reveal} \\ \text{You shall or will reveal} \\ \text{He shall or will reveal} \end{array} \right.$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelarémos,} \\ \text{Revelaréis,} \\ \text{Revelarán,} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We shall or will reveal} \\ \text{Ye shall or will reveal} \\ \text{They shall or will reveal.} \end{array} \right.$

Second Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{He, or téngo de revelár,} \\ \text{Has de revelár,} \\ \text{Ha de revelár,} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hémos, or havémos de re-} \\ \text{velár,} \\ \text{Havéis de revelár,} \\ \text{Han de revelár,} \end{array} \right\}$	$I \text{ am to or must reveal, &c.}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hémos de revelár,} \\ \text{Havéis de revelár,} \\ \text{Han de revelár,} \end{array} \right\}$		

Third Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havré} \\ \text{Havrás} \\ \text{Havrá} \\ \text{Havrémos} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{de Revelár} \end{array} \right\}$	$I \text{ shall be obliged to reveal, &c.}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havréis} \\ \text{Havrán} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{de Revelár} \end{array} \right\}$	

Fourth Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havía} \\ \text{Havías} \\ \text{Havía} \\ \text{Havíamos} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{de Revelár} \end{array} \right\}$	$I \text{ had, or I was to reveal, &c.}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Haviádeis} \\ \text{Havían} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{de Revelár} \end{array} \right\}$	

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revéla tu,} \\ \text{Revéle el,} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Do you reveal, or reveal thou} \\ \text{Let him reveal.} \end{array} \right.$
-------	---	---

Plur.

Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelémos nosotros,} \\ \text{Revelad vosotros,} \\ \text{Revélen éllos,} \end{array} \right.$	<i>Let us reveal.</i>
		<i>Do ye reveal, or let ye reveal.</i>
		<i>Let them reveal.</i>

The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with their Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

If, When, would God, God Grant.

Present Tense.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Yo revelé} \\ \text{Tu revelés} \\ \text{El revelé} \\ \text{Nosotros revelémos} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{When, or God grant, &c.} \\ \text{I reveal, &c.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Vosotros reveléis} \\ \text{Ellos revélen,} \end{array} \right.$	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelára, revelásse, revelaría} \\ \text{Reveláras, revelásses, revelarias} \\ \text{Revelára, revelásse, revelaría} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{When, or would} \\ \text{to God I did} \\ \text{reveal, &c.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Reveláramos, revelássemos, revelariámos} \\ \text{Reveláradeis, revelássedeis, revelariadeis} \\ \text{Reveláran, revelássen, revelarián.} \end{array} \right.$	

Three Preterperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Haya,} \\ \text{Hayas,} \\ \text{Haya,} \\ \text{Hayámos} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Revelado,} \\ \text{Revelado,} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{When, or would to God, &c.} \\ \text{I have reveal, &c.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hayáis} \\ \text{Hayan} \end{array} \right.$		

First

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	<i>Huviéra, or huviéssse</i>	Reveládo,	<i>When or would to God, &c.</i>
	<i>Huviéras, or huviéssses</i>		
	<i>Huviéra, or huviéssse</i>		
	<i>Huviéramos, or huviésssemos</i>		
Plur.	<i>Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis</i>		
	<i>Huviérán, or huviéssen</i>		

First Future.

Sing.	<i>Reveláre,</i>	Reveládo,	<i>When or would to God, &c.</i>
	<i>Reveláres,</i>		
	<i>Reveláre,</i>		
	<i>Reveláremos</i>		
Plur.	<i>Reveláredeis</i>		
	<i>Reveláren,</i>		

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>Huviére</i>	Reveládo,	<i>When or would to God, &c. I shall or will have revealed, &c.</i>
	<i>Huviéres</i>		
	<i>Huviére</i>		
	<i>Huviéremos</i>		
Plur.	<i>Huviéredeis</i>		
	<i>Huviéren</i>		

or otherwise havré reveládo.

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

*Revelár,**To reveal.*

Preterperfect.

*Havér reveládo**To have revealed.*

Future.

*Havér, or esperár de revelár**To reveal hereafter.*

Gerund.

Gerund.

Revelando, *Revealing.*

Supine of the Active Signification,

A revelar, *To be about to reveal.*

Supine of the Passive Signification,

A ser revelado, *To be revealed.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice,

Revelante, or el que revela, *Revealing.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Revelado, *Revealed.*

All regular Verbs that have their Infinitive in *ar*, are conjugated in all Points like this. The Irregular shall be treated of, after the following List of regular Verbs in *ar*, above spoken of.

Regular Verbs in ar.

L	La már, <i>to call.</i>	Aprovechár, <i>to profit.</i>
	Ayunár, <i>to fast.</i>	Cerár, <i>to sup.</i>
	C. imbrár, <i>to buy.</i>	Hallár, <i>to find.</i>
	Recompensar, <i>to requite.</i>	Topár, <i>to find.</i>
	Apartár, <i>to set aside.</i>	Ganár, <i>to gain.</i>
	Separár, <i>to separate.</i>	Contestár, <i>to contest.</i>
	Apelár, <i>to appeal.</i>	Despojár, <i>to strip.</i>
	Acomodár, <i>to adjust.</i>	Arrastrár, <i>to drag.</i>
	Peleár, <i>to fight.</i>	Fiár, <i>to trust.</i>
	Cantár, <i>to sing.</i>	Pagár, <i>to pay.</i>
	Llorár, <i>to weep.</i>	Saqueár, <i>to plunder.</i>

Amacerárá, to threaten.	Mandár, to command.
Injuriárá, to revile.	Dissimulár, to dissemble.
Atrentárá, to affront.	Engañár, to deceive
Aventurárá, to venture.	Desengañár, to undeceive.
Matár, to kill.	Bailár, to dance.
Curár, to cure, or heal.	Danzár, to dance.
Sanár, to heal, or recover health.	Domár, to tame.
Amedrantárá, to put into fear.	Lisongeár, to flatter.
Espantárá, to frighten.	Martyrizár, to torment.
Manchár, to spot, or stain.	Encantárá, to enchant.
Alzár, to take up.	Desnudár, to strip.
Levantárá, to raise.	Reposár, to repose.
Sudár, to sweat.	Cansár, to tire.
Remediárá, to remedy.	Animár, to encourage.
Cortárá, to cut.	Jurár, to swear.
Atár, to tye.	Rezár, to pray.
Azotárá, to whip.	Esterñudár, to sneeze.
Estimárá, to esteem.	Callár, to be silent.
Borrárá, to blot out.	Passeár, to walk.
Lavárá, to wash.	Alejár, to set at a distance.
Nadárá, to swim.	Condenárá, to condemn.
Hurtárá, to steal.	Dexár, to leave.
Robárá, to rob, to steal.	Ovidár, to forget.
Besárá, to kiss.	Porfiár, to contend.
Cabárá, to dig.	Gastár, to spend.
Cazárá, to hunt.	Acusár, to accuse.
Hechárs vino, o agua, to pour out wine, or water.	Aparejár, to make ready.
Hechárá de bever, to fill out drink.	Despreciárá, to despise.
Hechárá de cása, to turn out of doors.	Menospreciárá, to undervalue.
Hechárá úna ayúda, to give a cylinder.	Maltratárá, to misuse.
Despavilár la vélá, to snuff the candle.	Empeñárá, to engage.
Despavilár úna cósa, to make a thing vanish.	Acabárá, to finish.
Despavilár los ójos, to awake from sleep.	Amparárá, to protect.
Alumbrárá, to light.	Desamparárá, to forsake.
Tomárá, to take.	Mirárá, to look.
Quitárá, to remove, or to take Alabárá, to praise. (away).	Declarárá, to declare.
Alquilárá, to hire.	Procurárá, to procure.
Perdonárá, to pardon.	Entrárá, to come in.
Caminárá, to travel.	Criárá, to breed.
Reculárá, to draw back.	Embiárá, to send.
Adelantárá, to forward.	Apeárá, to alight.
Rebusárá, to refuse.	Retirárá, to retire.
	Abordárá, to come to shore.
	Arrebatárá, to snatch.
	Arrancárá, to tear up.
	Desarraigárá, to root up.
	Amansárá, to tame.
	Presentárá, to present.

Representárá,

Representár, *to represent.*
 Desafiar, *to challenge.*
 Ayudár, *to help.*
 Disfamár, *to defame.*
 Honrár, *to honour.*
 Tapár, *to cover.*
 Sitiár, *to besiege.*
 Enojár, *to anger.*
 Usár, *to use.*
 Casár, *to marry.*
 Amár, *to love.*

Conformár, *to conform.*
 Visitár, *to visit.*
 Confrontár, *to confront.*
 Comparár, *to compare.*
 Adorár, *to adore.*
 Tartamudeár, *to stammer.*
 Galanteár, *to court.*
 Escaramuzár, *to skirmish.*
 Disparár, *to discharge.*
 Enfanchár, *to widen.*
 Bambaleár, *to totter.*

It would be endless to pretend to mention all the Verbs of this sort, and therefore these may suffice ; but we may now proceed to the irregular Verbs of this Conjugation, which are many, and must be particularly taken notice of.

Here follow the irregular Verbs, which being under no certain Rule, must all be particularly conjugated.

The first Conjugation of Verbs irregular in ar.

Dar, *To give.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo dío	I give
	Tu das	You give
	El da	He gives
Plur.	Nosotros damos	We give
	Yosotros dáis	Ye give
	Ellos dan	They give.

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Dába Dábas Dába Dábamos	<i>I did give, or I was giving</i> <i>You did give</i> <i>He did give</i> <i>We did give</i>
Plur.	<i>{</i> Dábadeis, or dábais Dában	<i>Ye did give</i> <i>They did give</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Di Diste Dió	<i>I gave</i> <i>You gave</i> <i>He gave</i>
Plur.	<i>{</i> Dimos Disteis Diéron	<i>We gave</i> <i>Ye gave</i> <i>They gave</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Yo he, or húve dádo Tu has, or huviste dádo El ha, or húvo dádo	<i>I have given</i> <i>You have given</i> <i>He has given</i>
Plur.	<i>{</i> Hémos, or huvímos dádo Haveis, or huvísteis dádo Han, or huviéron dádo	<i>We have given</i> <i>Ye have given</i> <i>They have given.</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Havía Havías Havía	<i>Dádo, {</i>	<i>I had given, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{</i> Havíamos Haviadeis Havían		

First Future.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Daré, Darás, Dará,	<i>} I shall, or will give, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{</i> Darémos, Daréis, Darán.	

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or Téngo de dár Has de dár Ha de dár Havémos de dár	}	I am to, or must give, &c.
Plur.	{ Havéis de dár Han de dár		

Third Future.

Sing.	{ Havré Havrás Havrá Havrémos	}	De dár, { I shall be obliged to give, &c.
Plur.	{ Havréis Havrán		

Fourth Future, alias a Tense of Circumlocution.

Sing.	{ Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	}	De dár, { I had to give, or I was to give, &c.
Plur.	{ Haviadeis Havían		

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Da tu, De él,	Give thou
	Démos nosótros,	Let him give
Plur.	Dád vosótros,	Let us give
	Den éllas,	Give ye
		Let them give.

Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
 { *When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing. { *Yo de,*
 { *Tu des,*
 { *El de,*
 { *Demos,*
Plur. { *Déis,*
 { *Dén,*

} *When or God grant I do give, &c.*

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing. { *Diéra, diésse, daria*
 { *Diéras, diésses, darias*
 { *Diéra, diésse, daria*
Plur. { *Diéramos, diéssemos, dariamos*
 { *Diéradeis, or diérais, dariaðeis, or*
 { *dártais, diéssedeis, or diessedeis*
 { *Diéran, diéssen, darian*

} *When, or God grant*
I did give, or when
I might, could, or
should give.

Preterperfect.

Sing. { *Háya,*
 { *Háyas,*
 { *Háya,*
 { *Hayámos*
Plur. { *Hayáis*
 { *Hayan*

} *Dádo,* { *When, or would to God, &c.*
I had given, or when
I have given, &c.

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing. { *Huviéra, or huviésse*
 { *Huviéras, or huviésses*
 { *Huviéra, or huviésse*
Plur. { *Huviéramos, or huviéssemos*
 { *Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis*
 { *Huviéran, or huviéssen*

} *Dádo,* { *When, or would*
to God I had
given, &c.

First

First Future.

Sing.	<table> <tr> <td>Diére</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Diéres</td></tr> </table>	Diére	}	Diéres	When, or God grant I shall give, &c.
Diére	}				
Diéres					
Plur.	<table> <tr> <td>Diére</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Diéremos</td></tr> </table>	Diére	}	Diéremos	
Diére	}				
Diéremos					
	<table> <tr> <td>Diéredeis</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Diéren</td></tr> </table>	Diéredeis	}	Diéren	
Diéredeis	}				
Diéren					

Second Future.

Sing.	<table> <tr> <td>Huviére, or havré</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéres</td></tr> </table>	Huviére, or havré	}	Huviéres	Dádo, { When, or God grant I shall or will give, &c.
Huviére, or havré	}				
Huviéres					
Plur.	<table> <tr> <td>Huviére</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéremos</td></tr> </table>	Huviére	}	Huviéremos	
Huviére	}				
Huviéremos					
	<table> <tr> <td>Huviéredes</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéren</td></tr> </table>	Huviéredes	}	Huviéren	
Huviéredes	}				
Huviéren					

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dar To give

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dádo To have given

Future.

Havér de dár To give hereafter

Gerund.

Dándo Giving

Participle Passive.

Dádo Given

Participle

Participle of the Present Tense, Active Voice,

Dante, or el que da

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, *or* el pera de dar *To give breakfast*

First Supine.

to be about to give

Second Supine.

A Ter Dado

To be given

The next Irregular Verb of this Conjugation is,

Almorzár, To breakfast.

Indicative Mood.

Preface.

Sing. {	Almuérzo	I breakfast
	Almuérzas	You breakfast
	Almuérza	He breakfasts
	Almorzámos	We breakfast
Plur. {	Almorzáis	Ye breakfast
	Almuérzan	They breakfast

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Almorzába Almorzábas Almorzábita	<i>I did breakfast, or I was breakfasting</i> <i>You did breakfast</i> <i>He did breakfast</i>
		<i>Plur.</i>

Plur.	Almorzábamos	<i>We did breakfast</i>
	Almorzábais, or	<i>Ye did breakfast</i>
	Almorzábadeis	
	Almorzában	<i>They did breakfast</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Almorzé	<i>I have breakfasted</i>
	Almorzasté	<i>You have breakfasted</i>
	Almorzó	<i>He has breakfasted</i>
	Almorzámos	<i>We have breakfasted</i>

Plur.	Almorzásteis	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i>
	Almorzáron	<i>They have breakfasted</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	He, or húve almorzádo	<i>I have breakfasted</i>
	Has, or huviste almorzádo	<i>You have breakfasted</i>
	Ha, or húvo almorzádo	<i>He has breakfasted</i>
	Hémos, havémos, or huvímos almorzádo	<i>We have breakfasted</i>

Plur.	Havéis, or huvísteis almorzádo	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i>
	Han, or huviéron almorzádo	<i>They have breakfasted</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía almorzádo	<i>I had breakfasted</i>
	Havías almorzádo	<i>You had breakfasted</i>
	Havía almorzádo	<i>He had breakfasted</i>
	Havíamos almorzádo	<i>We had breakfasted</i>

Plur.	Haviadéis almorzádo	<i>Ye had breakfasted</i>
	Havían almorzádo	<i>They had breakfasted</i>

First Future.

Sing.	Almorzaré	I will, or shall breakf., &c.
	Almorzarás	
	Almorzará	
	Almorzarémos	

Plur.	Almorzaréis
	Almorzarán

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>{</i> He, or téngo de almorzár Has de almorzár Ha de almorzár	<i>{</i>	I am to, or must breakfast, &c.
Plur.	<i>{</i> Hémos, or havémos de almorzár Havéis de almorzár Han de almorzár	<i>}</i>	

Havré de almorzár
Havia de almorzár

I shall be obliged to breakfast
I was to breakfast.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Almuérza Almuérze	Do you breakfast
	<i>{</i> Almorzémos	Let him breakfast
Plur.	<i>{</i> Almorzad Almuérzen	Let us breakfast
		Do ye breakfast

Let them breakfast

The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with the Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

If, When, would God, God grant.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Yo almuérze Tu almuérzes	<i>{</i>	<i>If, When, would to God</i>
	<i>{</i> El almuérze		<i>I breakfast, &c.</i>
	<i>{</i> Almorzémos		
Plur.	<i>{</i> Almorzéis		

Almuérzen

Three

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaria Almorzáras, almorzásses, almorzarias	If, when, would to God I did breakfast, &c.
	Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaria	
	Almorzáramos, almorzássemos, almorzariámos	
Plur.	Almorzáradeis, almorzássedeis, almorzariadeis	
	Almorzáran, almorzássen, almorzarián	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas	Almorzádo, { If, when, would to God I Háya Hayámos
	Háya	
	Hayámos	
Plur.	Hayáis	
	Háyan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéras, or huviésses	Almorzádo, { If, when, Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéramos, or huviéssemos
	Huviéra, or huviésse	
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Almorzáre Almorzáres	Almorzádo, { If, when, would to God I shall Almorzáre Almorzáremos
	Almorzáre	
	Almorzáremos	
Plur.	Almorzáredeis	
	Almorzáren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres	Almorzádo, { If, when, God Huviére Huviéremos
	Huviére	
	Huviéremos	
Plur.	Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Almorzár

To breakfast

Preterperfect.

Havér almorzádo

To have breakfasted.

Future.

Havér, or esperár de almorzár,

To be to breakfast bereafter

Gerund.

Almorzándo

breakfasting

First Supine.

à Almorzár

To be about breakfasting

Second Supine.

à ser almorzádo

Having breakfasted

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que almuérza

Breakfasting

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Almorzádo

Breakfasted, &c.

The

The following Irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation, terminating in ar, are all conjugated after the same manner as Almorzár, changing the Penultima o into ue in the three Persons Singular, and the third of the Plural in all the Present Tenses.

Infinitive.	Present.	Preterperfect.
Contár, to count	Cuénto	Conté
Desollár, to flea	Desuéllo	Desollé
Resollár, to breast	Resuéllo	Resollé
Acordár, to remember	Acuérdo	Acordé
Mostrár, to show	Muéstro	Mostré
Assolár, to destroy	Assuéllo	Assolé
Volár, to fly	Uuélo	Volé
Apostár, to wager	Apuésto	Aposté
Hollár, to trample on	Huéllo	Hollé
Soltár, to let loose	Suélto	Solté
Forzár, to force	Fuérzo	Forcé
Provár, to try, or prove	Pruévo	Prové
Sonár, to sound	Suéno	Soné
Atronár, to thunder	Atruéno	Atroné
Degollár, to behead	Deguéllo	Degollé
Consolár, to comfort	Consuéllo	Consolé
Encontrár, to meet	Encuérntro	Encontré.

But jugár to play, changes u into ue.

All the Verbs ending in gar have the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative in que; as likewise the third of the singular, the first and last of the plural of the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. pe. Imperative, Pres. Optat.

Colgar, to hang	Cuélgo	Colgué	Cuélgue aquél	que yo Cuél- gue
Rogár, to intreat	Ruégo	Rogué	Ruégue el	que Ruegue
Pagár, to pay	Págó	Pagué	Págue el	que yo Págue
Holgár to be idle	Huélgo	Holgué	Huélgue el	que yo Huél- gue
Regár, to water	Riégo	Régué	Riégue el	que yo Ríégue &c.

The Verbs in *cár* change *car* in *que* in the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative; the third singular, the first and last of the plural in the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pres. p. Imperative, Pres. Optative.

Tocár, <i>to touch, to feel.</i>	tóco	toqué	tóqué el	que yo tóque
Trocár, <i>to change</i>	truéco	troqu	truéque el	que yo truéque, &c.

The following Verbs change the penultima *e* into *ie* in all the persons singular, and the third of the plural of the present tense of the indicative, imperative, and optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Imperative, Present Optative.

Apretár, <i>to squeeze</i>	apriéto	apriéta tu	que yo apriéte
Emmendar, <i>to mind</i>	emmiéndo	emmiénda tu	que yo emmiénde
Empezár, <i>to begin</i>	empiézo	empiéza tu	que yo empiéce
Cerrár <i>to shut</i>	Ciérra	Cierra tu	que yo ciérte
Enterrár, <i>to bury</i>	entiérra	entierra tu	que yo entiérre
Desterrár, <i>to banish</i>	destiérro	destierra tu	que yo destiérre
Confessár, <i>to confess</i>	confiésso	confiesa tu	que yo confiesse

And several other more, whose irregularity is only in the following Tenses, as

Tentár, to feel.

Present Indicative.

Sing. { Tiénto, Tiéntas Tiénta }	I feel, &c.	Plur. { Tentámos Tentáis Tíentan }	Imperative.
--	-------------	--	-------------

Imperative.

Sing.	{ Tienta tu, Tiente el	Feel thou 	Tentemos nosotros
			Plur. { Tentad vosotros Tienten aquellos

Present Optative.

Sing.	{ que Yo tiente, that I may Tiéntes Tiénte	feel 	Tentemos
			Plur. { Tentéis Tiénten
			otherwise they are conjugated as Revelár.

The Verb *Andár*, to go, or to go about, has the preterperfect of the indicative irregular ; and generally when such tense is irregular, the first and the second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

Andúve	Si, Anduviéra Anduviéssse	qu. anduviére, <i>anduviére</i>
Anduviste	Anduviéras, Anduviéssses	Anduviéres
Andúvo	Anduviéra, Anduviéssse	Anduviére
Anduvimos	Anduviéramos, Anduviésssemos	anduviéremos
Anduvisteis, <i>anduviéreis</i>	Anduviéradeis, Anduviéssadcis	anduviéredeis
Anduvieron	Anduviéran, Anduviéssen	anduviéren

in other Tenses is conjugated as Revelár.

Of the Verbs Passive

Of the First Conjugation:

VERBS Passive are formed in Spanish from the Active, by the auxiliary Verb, and the Participle Passive of the Preterperfect Tense, following always the Moods and Tenses of the Verb *Sér*, as

Sér amádo, to be beloved.

Present

Indicative.
Present Tense.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{soi} \\ \text{éres} \\ \text{es} \end{array} \right\}$	amádo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ am beloved} \\ \text{Thou art beloved} \\ \text{He is beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{somos} \\ \text{sois} \\ \text{son} \end{array} \right\}$	amádos	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We are beloved} \\ \text{Ye are beloved} \\ \text{They are beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{éra} \\ \text{éras} \\ \text{éra} \end{array} \right\}$	amádo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ was beloved} \\ \text{Thou was beloved} \\ \text{He was beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{éramos} \\ \text{éradeis} \\ \text{éran} \end{array} \right\}$	amádos	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We were beloved} \\ \text{Ye were beloved} \\ \text{They were beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

Preterperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fui, or he sido} \\ \text{fuiste, or has sido} \\ \text{fué, or ha sido} \end{array} \right\}$	amádo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ have been beloved} \\ \text{Thou has been beloved} \\ \text{He hath been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fuimos, or hémos sido} \\ \text{fuisteis, or havéis sido} \\ \text{fuéron, or han sido} \end{array} \right\}$	amádos	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We have been beloved} \\ \text{Ye have been beloved} \\ \text{They have been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havía sido} \\ \text{Havías sido} \\ \text{Havía sido} \end{array} \right\}$	amádo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ had been beloved} \\ \text{Thou hadst been beloved} \\ \text{He had been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havíamos sido} \\ \text{Haviadeis sido} \\ \text{Havían sido} \end{array} \right\}$	amádos	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We had been beloved} \\ \text{Ye had been beloved} \\ \text{They had been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

Future.

Seré amado, &c. I shall be beloved

And so throughout other Moods and Tenses.

Of the Reciprocal Verbs.

THE reciprocal Verbs are all terminated in *se* in the infinitive Mood, as *Acostárse* to lie down, or to grow near, or to come near; *Levantárse*, to rise up; *Librárse*, to discharge one's self, to make one's self free, &c. and are conjugated thus:

Adelantárse, to go before, to rise up to a Dignity or to Preferment.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Me adelánto Te adelantas Se adelánta Nos adelantámos	}	I go before, &c.
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantáis Se adelántan		
Plur.	{ Me adelantába Te adelantábas Se adelantába Nos adelantábamos	}	I did go before, &c.

Imperfect.

Sing.	{ Me adelantába Te adelantábas Se adelantába Nos adelantábamos	}	I did go before, &c.
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantábadeis Se adelantában		
Plur.	{ Me adelanté Te adelantáste Se adelantó Nos adelantámos	}	I went before.

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Me adelanté Te adelantáste Se adelantó Nos adelantámos	}	I went before.
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantásteis Se adelantáron		
Plur.	{ Me adelanté Te adelantáste Se adelantó Nos adelantámos	}	I went before.

I

Second

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Me he Te has Se ha Nos hemos	Adelantado	{ I have gone be- fore.
Plur.	{ Vos, or os havéis Se han		

And so in all the Tenses and Moods, but in the Imperative thus :

Sing.	{ Adelántate tu Adelántate el	{ Go thou before, &c.
	{ Adelantemos nos nosotros	
Plur.	{ Adelantados vosotros Adelántense aquellos.	

The Verb *Pesárse*, to be sorry, is conjugated thus :

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Pésame, or à mí me pésa, Pésate, or à ti te pésa, Pésale, or à el le pésa,	I am sorry
	{ Pésanos, or à nosotros nos pésa, Pésaos, or à vosotros os pésa,	Thou art sorry
Plur.	{ Pésales, or à ellos les pésa,	He is sorry
		We are sorry

I am sorry
Thou art sorry
He is sorry
We are sorry
Ye are sorry
They are sorry.

And so throughout all other Tenses ; but in the Imperative Mood thus :

Sing.	{ Pésete, Pésele,	Be thou sorry
	{ Pésenos,	Let him be sorry
Plur.	{ Péseos, Pésedes,	Let us be sorry
		Be ye sorry

Let them be sorry

Of

Of Verbs Impersonals belonging to the first Conjugation.

THE *Spanish* Impersonals, like the *Latin*, want the first and second Persons, and are declined only in the third Person, throughout all Moods and Tenses.

Of the *Impersonals* some are *Active*, and some *Passive*.
The *Active* are conjugated thus :

Nevár *To snow.*

Indicative.

Prefent Tense.

Niéva, *It snows.*

Imperfect.

Nevada, *It did jolt,*

First Preterperfect.

NEVO, *Il porto.*

Second and Third Interpreter.

114, 17. HAVE REVERED,
18. HAVE JEWISHED.

Trumpeter.

Future.

Nevará,	<i>It will snow.</i>
Que niéve,	<i>Let it snow.</i>
Será buéno que niéve,	<i>It will be good if that it snow.</i>
Si nevará, nevássce, or nevaría,	<i>If it would snow.</i>
Quando háya nevado,	<i>When it hath snowed.</i>
Si huviéra, or huviéssce nevado,	<i>If it had snowed.</i>
Quando nevare,	<i>When it shall snow</i>
Nevando,	<i>Snowing.</i>
Los Campos están nevados,	<i>The Fields are cover'd with snow.</i>
Niéve, a Noun,	<i>The snow.</i>

In this manner are conjugated the following Verbs :

Atrorár, or tronár, *to thunder*
 Granizár, or apedreár, *to hail*
 Helár, *to freeze*
 Relampageár, *to lighten*
 Ahumár, *to smoke*
 Constár, *to be plain, or clear*
 Importár, *to import, to be convenient*

The passive Impersonals are conjugated with the Particle *se* before or after the Verb, as

Se cuénta, *It is said, it is told, it is related, it is reported.*
 Se contába, *It was said.*
 Se contó }
 Se ha, or húvo contado } *It hath been said.*
 Se havía contado, *It had been said.*
 Se contará, *It will be said.*

And so throughout all other Tenses and Moods.

N. B. That all the Verbs regular, or irregular, personals, or impersonals, except the regular passive, may be otherwise conjugated by the auxiliary Verb *Estár*, and the Gerund of the Verb, through all the Tenses and Moods, as

Present.

Present. Indicative.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ámo or estoy amando,} \\ \text{ámas, or estás amando} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I love, or I am loving, &c.</i>
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{áma, or está amando} \\ \text{amámos, or estamos amando} \end{array} \right.$	
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{amáis, or estáis amando} \\ \text{áman, or están amando} \end{array} \right.$	

Imperfect.

Amaba, or estaba amando,	<i>I was loving</i>
--------------------------	---------------------

Perfect.

Amé, or estuve amando,	<i>I did love, &c.</i>
Llamo, or estoy llamando	<i>I call, or am calling</i>
Hablo, or estoy hablando,	<i>I speak, or am speaking, &c.</i>

The same is to be observed in all the Conjugations.

It must be observed here, that there are some Nouns called Verbs, for their being derived from the Verbs; in *Latin* those are terminated generally in *bilis*, in *tor*, and *ix*, and in *Spanish* in *ble*, *dor*, and *iz*: as

<i>Latin.</i>	<i>Spanish.</i>
<i>bilis</i>	<i>Amabilis</i>
<i>tor</i>	<i>Amator</i>
<i>ix</i>	<i>Amatrix</i>

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ble} \\ \text{dor} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Amable} \\ \text{Amador} \end{array} \right\}$
$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{iz} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Amatriz, or} \\ \text{amadora.} \end{array} \right\}$

But note, That there are some *Spanish* Verbs which are defectives in this particular, as well as some *Latin* Verbs.

*Of Verbs Regular of the second Conjugation, in er.*Respondér, *To answer.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Respónda, Respóndes, Respónde,	I answer You answer He answers
Plur.	{ Respondémos, Respondéis Respónden,	We answer Ye answer They answer

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Respondía, Respondías, Respondía,	I did answer, or I was answering. You did answer He did answer
Plur.	{ Respondíamos, Respondíadeis, Respondían,	We did answer Ye did answer They did answer

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Respondí, Respondíste, Respondió,	I answered You answered He answered
Plur.	{ Respondímos, Respondídeis, Respondiéron,	We answered Ye answered They answered

Second

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>He, or</i> húve <i>Has, or</i> huvisté <i>Ha, or</i> húvo	Respondido,	<i>I have answered</i> <i>You have answered</i> <i>He has answered</i> <i>We have answered</i>
	<i>Hémos, havémos, or</i> huvímos		<i>Ye have answered</i> <i>They have answered</i>
Plur.	<i>Havéis, or</i> huvísteis		
	<i>Han, or</i> huviéron		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	<i>Havía</i> <i>Havías</i>	Respondido,	<i>I had answered, &c.</i>
	<i>Havía</i> <i>Havíamos</i>		
Plur.	<i>Havíadeis</i>		
	<i>Havían</i>		

First Future.

Sing.	<i>Responderé,</i> <i>Responderás,</i> <i>Responderá,</i> <i>Responderémos,</i>		<i>I shall, or will answer, &c.</i>
	<i>Responderéis,</i> <i>Responderán,</i>		
Plur.			

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>He, or</i> Téngo de responder, <i>Has de responder</i>		<i>I am, to or must answer, &c.</i>
	<i>Ha de responder,</i>		
Plur.	<i>Hémos, or</i> havémos de responder		
	<i>Havéis de responder,</i>		

Third Future.

Sing.	<i>Havré de responder,</i>	<i>I shall be oblig'd to answer.</i>
-------	----------------------------	--------------------------------------

Fourth Future.

Sing. *Havía de responder,**I was to answer.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ <i>Respónde tu,</i> <i>Re-spónda el,</i>	<i>Do you answer, or answer thou</i> <i>Let him answer</i>
Plur.	{ <i>Re-pondámos n^o</i> <i>Respondiénd v^o</i> <i>Re-spóndan ellos</i>	<i>Let us answer.</i> <i>Do ye answer, or let you answer</i> <i>Let them answer</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
 { *When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ <i>Respónda,</i> <i>Respóndas,</i> <i>Respónda,</i> <i>Respondámos,</i>	} <i>When, or God grant I do answer, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ <i>Respondáis</i> <i>Respóndan,</i>	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ <i>Respondiéra, respondiéssie, or respondería,</i> <i>Respondíeras, respondiéssies, or responderías,</i> <i>Respondiéra, respondiéssie, or respondería</i>	} <i>When, or God grant I did answer, &c.</i>
	{ <i>Respondíeramos, respondiéssedeis, or responderíamos</i>	
	{ <i>Respondíerais, or respondiéssemos, or responderíadeis</i>	
Plur.	{ <i>Respondíeran, respondiéssen, or responderían.</i>	

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{H\'aya} \\ \text{H\'ayas} \\ \text{H\'aya} \\ \text{Hay\'amos} \end{array} \right\}$	Respondido,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{When, or would to God, &c.} \\ \text{I have answered, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hay\'ais} \\ \text{H\'ayan} \end{array} \right\}$		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huvi\'era, or huvi\'esse} \\ \text{Huvi\'eras, or huvi\'esses} \\ \text{Huvi\'era, or huvi\'esse} \end{array} \right\}$	Respondido,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{When, or} \\ \text{would to} \\ \text{God I had} \\ \text{answered,} \\ \text{&c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huvi\'eramos, or huvi\'essemos} \\ \text{Huvi\'eradeis, or huvi\'essedeis} \\ \text{Huvi\'eran, or huvi\'essen} \end{array} \right\}$		

First Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Respondi\'er,} \\ \text{Respondi\'eres,} \\ \text{Respondi\'ere,} \end{array} \right\}$	Respondido,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{When, or God grant I shall,} \\ \text{or will answer, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Respondi\'eremos,} \\ \text{Respondi\'eredeis,} \\ \text{Respondi\'eren} \end{array} \right\}$		

Second Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huvi\'ere, or havr\'e} \\ \text{Huvi\'eres,} \\ \text{Huvi\'ere} \end{array} \right\}$	Respondido,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{When, or God grant} \\ \text{I shall or will} \\ \text{have answered,} \\ \text{&c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huvi\'eremos} \\ \text{Huvi\'eredeis} \\ \text{Huvi\'eren} \end{array} \right\}$		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Respond\'er,

To answer.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Haver respondido; *To have answered.*

Future Tense.

Haver de responder, *To be to answer.*

Gerund.

Respondiendo, *Answering.*

Participle Active.

Respondiente, or el que responde, *Answering.*

Participle Passive.

Respondido, *Answered, &c.*

All other regular Verbs of the second Conjugation in *er*, are conjugated after the same manner ; of which take the following List :

Verbs conjugated as Respondér,

Correspondér, to correspond.
Comér, to eat.
Bebér, to drink.
Reprehendér, to reprove.
Barrér, to sweep.
Vendér, to sell.
Concedér, to grant.
Acometér, to attack.
Cortér, to run.

Metér, to put in.
Prometér, to promise.
Ofendér, to offend.
Escondér, to hide.
Aprendér, to learn.
Temér, to fear.
Emprendér, to undertake.
Debér, to owe.
Cometér, to commit.

Of

Of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in er, as,

Trahér, to bring.

Sabér, to know.

Tenér, to have.

Podér, to be able.

Querér, to will or love.

Ponér, to put.

Hacér, to do.

Cabér, to be contained.

Ver, to see.

Trahér, To fetch or bring.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo tráhigo	I fetch or bring
	Tu tráhes	You fetch or bring
	El tráhe	He fetches or brings
Plur.	Nosotros trahémos	We fetch or bring
	Vosotros trahéis	Ye fetch or bring
	Ellos tráhen	They fetch or bring.

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Trahía	I did fetch or bring
	Trahías	You did fetch or bring
	Trahía	He did fetch or bring
Plur.	Trahíamos	We did fetch or bring
	Trahíais	Ye did fetch or bring
	Trahían	They did fetch or bring.

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Tráxe, or trúxe	I have fetcht or brought
	Traxiste, or truxiste	You have fetcht or brought
	Tráxo, or trúxo	He bath fetcht or brought
Plur.	Traximos, or truximos	We have fetcht or brought
	Traxisteis, or truxisteis	Ye have fetcht or brought
	Traxeron, or truxeron	They have fetcht or brought

Second

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	Hé, or húve	Trahido,	<i>I have fetcht or brought, &c.</i>
	Has		
	Ha		
	Hémos, or havémos		
Plur.	Havéis		
	Han		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia	Trahido,	<i>I had fetcht or brought, &c.</i>
	Havias		
	Havia		
	Haviámos		
Plur.	Haviadeis		
	Havian		

First Future.

Sing.	Traheré	I shall or will fetch or bring, &c.
	Traherás	
	Traherá	
	Traherémos	
Plur.	Traheréis	
	Traherán	

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or téngo de trahér	I am to or must fetch or bring, &c.
	Has de trahér	
	Ha de trahér	
	Hémos, or havémos de trahér	
Plur.	Havéis de trahér	
	Han de trahér	

The third and fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Tráhe tu,	Bring or fetch thou
	Tráhiga el,	
Plur.		

Plur.	Trahigámos nosótros,	Let us bring or fetch
	Trahéd vosótros,	Do ye bring or fetch
	Tráhigan éllos	Let them bring or fetch

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá.

When, God grant, would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Tráhiga	When or would to God I do bring or fetch, &c.
	Tráhigas	
	Tráhiga	
	Trahigámos	
Plur.	Trahigáis	
	Tráhigan	

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	Truxéra, truxéſſe, trahería	When, or would to God I did bring or fetch, &c.
	Truxéras, truxéſſes, traherías	
	Truxéra, truxéſſe, trahería	
Plur.	Truxerámos, truxéſſemos, traheríamos	
	Truxéradeis, truxéſſedeis, traheríadeis	
	Truxéran, truxéſſen, traherían	

The first and second may be conjugated by Traxéra, and Traxéſſe.

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Háya	Trahido, When, or would to God have brought or fetch, &c.
	Háyas	
	Háya	
	Hayámos	
Plur.	Hayáis	
	Hyan	

First

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	<i>{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe</i>	Trahido,	<i>{ When, or would to God had brought or fetcht, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Huviéſſas, or huviéſſes</i>		
	<i>{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe</i>		
	<i>{ Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos</i>		
Plur.	<i>{ Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis</i>		
	<i>{ Huviéran, or huviéſſen</i>		

First Future.

Sing.	<i>{ Traxére, or truxére</i>	Trahido,	<i>{ When, or God grant I shall fetch or bring, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Traxéſſes, or truxéſſes</i>		
	<i>{ Traxére, or truxére</i>		
	<i>{ Traxéſſemos, or truxéſſemos</i>		
Plur.	<i>{ Traxéſſedeis, or truxéſſedeis</i>		
	<i>{ Traxéſſen, or truxéſſen</i>		

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>{ Huviéra, or havré</i>	Trahido,	<i>{ When, or God grant I may, or shall have brought or fetcht, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Huviéſſes</i>		
	<i>{ Huviéra</i>		
	<i>{ Huviéſſemos</i>		
Plur.	<i>{ Huviéſſedeis</i>		
	<i>{ Huviéſſen</i>		

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Trahér, *To bring, or fetch.*

Preterperfect.

Havér trahido, *To have brought, or fetch'd.*

Future.

Havér, or esperár de trahér *To bring, or fetch hereafter.*

Gerund.

Trahiendo,

Bringing, or fetching.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Trahido

Brangt, or fetch'd, &c.

The same manner of Conjugation is to be observed in all Verbs compounded of *Trabér*, as *Retrabér*, to draw back, &c.

The Irregular Verb Sabér, To know.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo sé, Tu sabes, El sabe,	I know You know He knows
Plur.	{ Sabémos, Sabéis Sáben,	We know Ye know They know

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Sabía, Sabías, Sabía,	I did know You did know He did know
Plur.	{ Sabíamos, Sabiadeis Sabían,	We did know Ye did know They did know

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Sápe, Supiste, Sápo, Supimos,	I knew You knew He knew We knew
Plur.	{ Supisteis Supiéron,	Ye knew They knew

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve sabido Has sabido, Ha sabido,	I have known You have known He has known
Plur.	{ Hémos sabido, Havéis sabido, Han sabido,	We have known Ye have known They have known

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havia Havias Havia	Sabido,	I had known You had known He had known We had known Ye had known They had known
Plur.	{ Haviámos Haviadeis Havían		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Sabré, Sabrás, Sabrá,	I shall, or will know
Plur.	{ Sabrémos, Sabréis, Sabrán,	He shall, or will know We shall, or will know Ye shall, or will know They shall, or will know

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or Téngo de sabér, Has de sabér, Ha de sabér,	I am to know You are to know He is to know
-------	---	--

<i>Plur.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Hémos de sabér</td><td><i>We are to know</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Havéis de sabér</td><td><i>Ye are to know</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Han de sabér</td><td><i>They are to know</i></td></tr> </table>	Hémos de sabér	<i>We are to know</i>	Havéis de sabér	<i>Ye are to know</i>	Han de sabér	<i>They are to know</i>
Hémos de sabér	<i>We are to know</i>						
Havéis de sabér	<i>Ye are to know</i>						
Han de sabér	<i>They are to know</i>						

Third Future.

Havré de sabér	<i>I shall be oblig'd to know</i>
----------------	-----------------------------------

Fourth Future.

Havia de sabér	<i>I was to know</i>
----------------	----------------------

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Sábe tu</td><td><i>Know you</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Sépa el</td><td><i>Let him know</i></td></tr> </table>	Sábe tu	<i>Know you</i>	Sépa el	<i>Let him know</i>		
Sábe tu	<i>Know you</i>						
Sépa el	<i>Let him know</i>						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Sepámos nosóttos</td> <td><i>Let us know</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Sabéd vosóttos</td> <td><i>Know ye</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Sépan éllos</td> <td><i>Let them know</i></td> </tr> </table>	Sepámos nosóttos	<i>Let us know</i>	Sabéd vosóttos	<i>Know ye</i>	Sépan éllos	<i>Let them know</i>
Sepámos nosóttos	<i>Let us know</i>						
Sabéd vosóttos	<i>Know ye</i>						
Sépan éllos	<i>Let them know</i>						

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

<table> <tr> <td>Cómo,</td><td><i>As it is</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Aunque,</td><td><i>Although</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Oxalá,</td><td><i>God grant that</i></td></tr> </table>	Cómo,	<i>As it is</i>	Aunque,	<i>Although</i>	Oxalá,	<i>God grant that</i>	
Cómo,	<i>As it is</i>						
Aunque,	<i>Although</i>						
Oxalá,	<i>God grant that</i>						
<table> <tr> <td>When,</td><td><i>When</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Though,</td><td><i>Though</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Would to God.</td><td><i>God grant that I may</i></td></tr> </table>	When,	<i>When</i>	Though,	<i>Though</i>	Would to God.	<i>God grant that I may</i>	
When,	<i>When</i>						
Though,	<i>Though</i>						
Would to God.	<i>God grant that I may</i>						

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Sépa</td><td rowspan="4" style="vertical-align: middle; text-align: center;">}</td><td rowspan="4" style="vertical-align: middle; text-align: center;"><i>God grant that I may</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Sépas</td></tr> <tr> <td>Sépa</td></tr> <tr> <td>Sepámos</td></tr> </table>	Sépa	}	<i>God grant that I may</i>	Sépas	Sépa	Sepámos	
Sépa	}	<i>God grant that I may</i>						
Sépas								
Sépa								
Sepámos								
<i>Plur.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Sepáis</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Sépan</td></tr> </table>	Sepáis	Sépan					
Sepáis								
Sépan								

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Supiéra, supiésse, sabría Supiéras, supiésses, sabrías Supiéra, supiésse, sabría	When, or God grant I did know, &c.
	Supiéramos, supiéssemos, sabriamos	
	Supiéradeis, supiéssedeis, sabriadeis	
Plur.	{ Supiéran, supiéßen, sabrían	When, or God grant I have known, &c.

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya sabido Hayas sabido Haya sabido	When, or God grant I have known, &c.
	Hayámos sabido	
	Hayáis sabido	
Plur.	{ Hayan sabido	When, or God grant I have known, &c.

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviésse	Sabido, { When, or would to God I had known, &c.
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	
	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
Plur.	{ Huviéran, or huviéßen	When, or God grant I have known, &c.

First Future.

Sing.	{ Supiére Supiéres Supiére	When, or God grant I shall know, &c.
	Supiéremos	
	Supiéredeis	
Plur.	{ Supiéren	When, or God grant I shall know, &c.

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres,	Sabido { When, or God grant I shall have known, &c.
	Huviére	
	Huviéremos	
Plur.	{ Huviéredeis	When, or God grant I shall have known, &c.
	Huviérea	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sabér

To know

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér sabido

To have known

Future Tense.

Havér, or esperár de sabér

To know hereafter

Gerund.

Sabiéndo

Knowing

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sabe

Knowing

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Sabido

Known

The Irregular Verb Tenér, To have, or hold.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing. { Téngo
 { Tiénes
 { Tiéne

I have, or hold
You have, or hold
He has, or holds

K 2

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	{ Tenemos Tenéis Tiénen	We have, or hold Ye have, or hold They have, or hold
--------------	-------------------------------	--

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Tenía Tenías Tenía Teníamos	} I did have, or hold, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Teníadeis Tenían	

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Túve Tuviste Túvo Tuvimos	I had, or held You had, or held He had, or held We had, or held
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Tuvisteis Tuvieron	Ye had, or held They had, or held

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or húve tenido Has tenido Ha tenido	I have had You have had He has had
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos tenido Havéis tenido Han tenido	We have had Ye have had They have had

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havia Hacias Havia Haviamos	} Tenido	I had had You had had He had had We had had
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haviadeis Havian		Ye had had They had had

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Tendré terné, or tenré Tendrás ternás, or tenrás Tendrá terná, or tenra	I shall, or will have You shall, or will have He shall, or will have
--------------	---	--

Plur.

Plur.	{	Tendrémos ternémos, or tenrémos	We shall, or will have
		Tendréis ternéis, or tenréis	Ye shall, or will have
		Tendrán ternán, or tenrán	They shall, or will have

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He de tenér	I am to have, or bold
		Has de tenér	You are to have, or bold
		Ha de tener	He is to have, or bold
Plur.	{	Hémos de tenér	We are to have, or bold
		Havéis de tenér	Ye are to have, or bold
		Han de tener	They are to have, or bold

Third Future.

Havré de tener	I shall be oblig'd to have or bold
----------------	------------------------------------

Fourth Future.

Havía de tener	I was to have
----------------	---------------

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ten tu	Do thou have, or bold thou
		Ténga el	Let him have, or bold
		Tengámos nosótrios	Let us have, or bold
Plur.	{	Tenéde vosótrios	Do ye have, or bold, or let ye bold
		Téngan ellos	Let them have, or bold

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cémo, Oxalá, Aunque.

When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Ténga	When, or God grant I do have, or bold, &c.
		Téngas	
		Téngas	
		Tengámos	
		Tengáis	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendría	When, or would to God I did have or hold, &c.
	Tuviéras, tuviéſſes, ternías, or tendrías	
	Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendría	
	Tuviéramos, tuviéſſemos, ternía- mos, or tendríamos	
Plur.	Tuviéradeis, tuviéſſedeis, terní- mos, or tendriadeis	When, or God grant I have had, or held, &c.
	Tuviéran, tuviéſſen, ternían, or tendrian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Haya tenido	When, or God grant I have had, or held, &c.
	Hayas tenido	
	Haya tenido	
	Hayámos tenido	
Plur.	Hayáis tenido	When, or God grant I have had, or held, &c.
	Hayan tenido	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	Tenido, { When, or would to God I had had, or held &c.
	Huviéras, or huviéſſes	
	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	
	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis	Tenido, { When, or would to God I had had, or held &c.
	Huviéran, or huviéſſen	

First Future.

Sing.	Tuviére	When, or God grant I shall have or hold, &c.
	Tuviéres	
	Tuviére	
	Tuviéremos	
Plur.	Tuviéredes	When, or God grant I shall have or hold, &c.
	Tuviéren	

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré	Tenido,	When, or God grants I shall have had or held, &c.
	Huviéres		
	Huviére		
	Huviéremos		
Plur.	Huviéredéis		
	Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Tenér *To have or to hold.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér tenido *To have had or held*

Future Tense.

Havér de tenér *To be to have or hold*

Gerund.

Teniendo *Holding*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que tiene *Holding*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Tenido *Held*

Like this Verb simple are its Compounds in all points declined, thro' all Moods and Tenses, as

Mantenér, to maintain; *Yo manténgo, I maintain, mantuve, I maintained.*

Detenér, to detain or stay; *Detengo, I detain; detuve, I detained.*

Retenér,

136 *The RUDIMENTS of*
Retenér, to retain or withhold; Reténgo, I retain; retúve, I retained
Sostenér, to sustain or uphold; Sosténgo, I sustain; sostúve, I sustained

The Irregular Verb Podér, To be able.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Puedo Puédes Puéde	I can, or am able
		You can, or are able
		He can, or is able
Plur.	{ Podémos Podeís Puéden	W'e can, or are able
		Ye can, or are able
		They can, or are able

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Podia Podias Podia	I could, or was able
		You could, or was able
		He could, or was able
Plur.	{ Podíamos Podiadeis Podian	W'e could, or were able
		Ye could, or were able
		They could, or were able

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Púde Pudiste Púdo	I could, or have been able, &c.
Plur.		

Second

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hé, or húve} \\ \text{Has} \\ \text{Ha} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Podido,} \\ \text{I could, or have been able} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I could, or have been able</i>
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hémos, or} \\ \text{havémos} \end{array} \right.$		<i>You could, or have been able</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havéis} \\ \text{Han} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{He could, or has been able} \\ \text{We could, or have been able} \end{array} \right.$	<i>He could, or has been able</i>
		$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ye could, or have been able} \\ \text{They could, or have been able} \end{array} \right.$	<i>We could, or have been able</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havia} \\ \text{Havias} \\ \text{Havia} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Podido,} \\ \text{I had been able, &c.} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I had been able, &c.</i>
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Haviámos} \\ \text{Haviadeis} \\ \text{Havían} \end{array} \right.$		
Plur.			

First Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Podré} \\ \text{Podrás} \\ \text{Podrá} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I shall, or will be able,} \\ \text{&c.} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I shall, or will be able, &c.</i>
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Podrémos} \\ \text{Podréis} \\ \text{Podrán} \end{array} \right.$		
Plur.			

Second Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{He, or téngo de podér} \\ \text{Has de podér} \\ \text{Ha de podér} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I must, or will be} \\ \text{able, &c.} \end{array} \right.$	<i>I must, or will be able, &c.</i>
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hémos, or havémos de podér} \\ \text{Havéis de podér} \\ \text{Han de podér} \end{array} \right.$		
Plur.			

Third Future.

Havré de podér *I shall be obliged to be able*

Fourth Future.

Havía de podér *I was to be able* Though

Though it seems improper for this Word to have a second, third, and fourth Futures of the Indicative Mood, or any Imperative Mood, and most Grammarians will allow it neither, yet they are frequently and properly used. As to the second Future, it is very usual, and when one says, he cannot do such a thing, to answer, *Has de podér*, You shall be able; by way of compelling slothful persons, or such as may improve by often trying to do that which they cannot do at present. The same is to be said of the Imperative, which is in the nature of the second future, being compulsive; as, if one say, *No podémos bacér ésto*, We cannot do this; and another answers, *Pués podámos*, Then let us be able; that is, let us use our Endeavours, that we may perform that which we think we cannot do. Therefore we will proceed to the

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Puéde tu	Do you be able
		Puéda el	Let him be able
	{	Podámos nosotros	Let us be able
Plur.	{	Podéd vosotros	Do ye be able
		Puédan ellos	Let them be able

Subjunctive and Optative Mood, with the Signs,

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
 { When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Puéda	When, or God grant I can, or be able, &c.
		Puédas	
	{	Puéda	
		Podámos	
Plur.	{	Podáis	

Preter-

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{ Pudiéra, pudiéssé, podría Pudiéras, pudiésses, podrías	When, or would to God I could or might be able, &c.
	{ Pudiéra, pudiéssé, podría	
	{ Pudiéramos, pudiéssemos, podríamos	
Plur.	{ Pudiéramos, pudiéssemos, podríamos	
	{ Pudiéradeis, pudiéssedeis, podríadeis	
	{ Pudiéran, pudiéssen, podrían	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya Háyas	Podido, { When, or would to God, &c. I have been able, &c.
	{ Haya	
	{ Hayámos	
Plur.	{ Hayáis	
	{ Hyán	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviésses	Podido, { When, or would to God I had been able, &c.
	{ Huviéra, or huviéssé	
	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	
	{ Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	{ Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Pudiére Pudiéres	Podido, { When, or God grant I shall, or may be able, &c.
	{ Pudiére	
	{ Pudiéremos	
Plur.	{ Pudiéremos	
	{ Pudiéredeis	
	{ Pudiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres	Podido, { When, or God grant I may, or shall have been able, &c.
	{ Huviére	
	{ Huviéremos	
Plur.	{ Huviéremos	
	{ Huviéredeis	
	{ Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Podér

To be able

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér podido

To have been able

Gerund.

Pudiéndo,

*Being able, &c.**The Irregular Verb Querér, To will, or love.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Yo</i> quíero	<i>I will, or love</i>
	<i>Tu</i> quíeres	<i>You will, or love</i>
	<i>El</i> quíere	<i>He wills, or loves</i>
	<i>Nosotros</i> querémos	<i>We will, or love</i>
Plur.	<i>Vosotros</i> queréis	<i>Ye will, or love</i>
	<i>Ellos</i> quíeren	<i>They will, or love</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	<i>Quería,</i>	<i>I did will, or love</i>
	<i>Querías</i>	<i>You did will, or love</i>
	<i>Quería</i>	<i>He did will, or love</i>
	<i>Queríamos</i>	<i>We did will, or love</i>
Plur.	<i>Queríadeis</i>	<i>Ye did will, or love</i>
	<i>Querían</i>	<i>They did will, or love.</i>

First

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quise Quisiste Quiso	I willed, or loved You willed, or loved He willed, or loved
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Quisimos Quisisteis Quisieron	We willed, or loved Ye willed, or loved They willed, or loved

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or húve Has Ha	Querido, { I have willed, or loved, &c.
	Hémos, or havémos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haveis Han	

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havia Havias Havia	Querido, { I had willed, or loved, &c.
	Haviámos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haviadeis Havian	

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Querré Querrás Querrá	I will, or shall will, or love, &c.
	Querrémos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Querréis Querrán	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or téngo de querér Has de querér	I am to, or must will, or love, &c.
	Ha de querér	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos, or havémos de querér	
	Haveis de querér	
	Han de querér	

Third

*Third Future.**Havré de querér**I shall be obliged to love**Pourth Future.**Havia de querér**I had, or I was to love**Imperative Mood.*

Sing. { Quiére tu
Quiera el

Plur. { Querámos nosotros
Queréd vosotros
Quieran ellos

Do you will, or love
Let him will, or love
Let us will, or love
Do ye will, or love
Let them will, or love

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, Though, would to God,

Present Tense.

Sing. { Quiéra
Quiéras
Quiéra
Querámos

Plur. { Queráis
Quiéran

} *When, or God grant I will
or love, &c.*

Three Preterimperfect Tenses.

Sing. { Quisiéra, quisésse, querría
Quisiéras, quisésses, querriás
Quisiéra, quisésse, querría
Quisiéramos, quisiéssemos, querriámos

Plur. { Quisiéradeis, quiséssedeis, querriadeis
Quisiéran, quiséssen, querrián

} *When, or God
grant I would
or did love,
&c.*

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	Háya	Querido,	<i>When, or God grant I have will'd, or lov'd, &c.</i>
	Háyas		
	Háya		
	Hayámos		
Plur.	Hayáis		
	Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssó	Querido	<i>When, or would to God I had will'd, or lov'd, &c.</i>
	Huviéras, or huviésses		
	Huviéra, or huviéssó		
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos		
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		
	Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	Quisiére	<i>When, or God grant I shall will, or love, &c.</i>
	Quisiéres	
	Quisiére	
	Quisiéremos	
Plur.	Quisiéredeis	
	Quisiérea	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviéra, or havré	Querido,	<i>When, or God grant I shall be willing, or love, &c.</i>
	Huviéres		
	Huviéra		
	Huviéremos		
Plur.	Huviéredeis		
	Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Querér

To wil', or love

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Havér querido

To have will'd, or lov'd

Gerund.

Queriéndo

Loving

Participle.

Querido

Will'd, or lov'd, &c.

This Verb may be declined through all Moods and Tenses with the word *Mas* added to it, which with it sometimes signifies *rather*, and sometimes *more*, as *Mas quíero callár que bablár mal*, I had rather be silent than speak ill; or *Mas quíero a Pédro que a Juán*, I love Peter more, or better than John.

The Irregular Verb Ponér, To put, or place.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Yo pongo</i>	}	<i>I put, or place, &c.</i>
	<i>Tu pones</i>		
	<i>El pónε</i>		
	<i>Ponémos</i>		
Plur.	<i>Ponéis</i>		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	<i>Ponía</i>	<i>I did put</i>
	<i>Ponías</i>	<i>You did put</i>
	<i>Ponía</i>	<i>He did put</i>

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Poníamos</td><td><i>We did put</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Poníadeis</td><td><i>Ye did put</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Ponían</td><td><i>They did put</i></td></tr> </table>	Poníamos	<i>We did put</i>	Poníadeis	<i>Ye did put</i>	Ponían	<i>They did put</i>
Poníamos	<i>We did put</i>						
Poníadeis	<i>Ye did put</i>						
Ponían	<i>They did put</i>						

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Púse</td><td rowspan="3">]</td></tr> <tr> <td>Púiste</td></tr> <tr> <td>Púso</td></tr> </table>	Púse]	Púiste	Púso
Púse]				
Púiste					
Púso					
<i>Plur.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Pusimos</td><td rowspan="3">]</td></tr> <tr> <td>Pusisteis</td></tr> <tr> <td>Pusieron</td></tr> </table>	Pusimos]	Pusisteis	Pusieron
Pusimos]				
Pusisteis					
Pusieron					

I have put, &c.

Second Preterperfect.

Sing. He, or húve Puésto, *I have put, &c.*

Preterpluperfect.

Sing. Havia Puésto, *I had put, &c.*

First Future.

Sing. Pondré, or pónré *I shall, or will put, &c.*

Second Future.

Sing. He, or Téngo de poner *I am to, or must put, &c.*

Third Future.

Havré de poner	<i>I shall be oblig'd to put</i>
Havia de poner	<i>I had, or I was to put</i>

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Pon tu</td><td><i>Do you put, or put thou</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Pónga el</td><td><i>Let him put</i></td></tr> </table>	Pon tu	<i>Do you put, or put thou</i>	Pónga el	<i>Let him put</i>		
Pon tu	<i>Do you put, or put thou</i>						
Pónga el	<i>Let him put</i>						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table> <tr> <td>Pongámos nosotros</td> <td><i>Let us put</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Poned vosotros</td> <td><i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Póngan ellos</td> <td><i>Let them put</i></td> </tr> </table>	Pongámos nosotros	<i>Let us put</i>	Poned vosotros	<i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i>	Póngan ellos	<i>Let them put</i>
Pongámos nosotros	<i>Let us put</i>						
Poned vosotros	<i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i>						
Póngan ellos	<i>Let them put</i>						

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
 { When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Pónga Póngas Pónga Pongámos	}	When, or God grant I do put, &c.
Plur.	{ Pongáis Póngan		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Pusíéra, pusíésse, or poniá, pon- dría Pusíéras, pusíésses, or poniás, pondrías	When, or would to God I did put, &c.
	{ Pusíéra, pusíésse, or poniá, pon- dría	
	{ Pusíéramos, pusíéssemos, or por- niámos, pondríamos	
Plur.	{ Pusíéradeis, pusíéssedeis, or por- niadeis, pondriadeis	
	{ Pusíérán, pusíéßen, or ponián, pondrian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya Hayas Haya Hayámos	{ Puésto,	When, or God grant I have put, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayáis Hayan		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	<i>{ Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssé }</i>	<i>{</i>	Puésto,	<i>{ When, or would to God I had put, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviérán, or huviéssen }</i>			

First Future.

Sing.	<i>{ Pusiére Pusiéres Pusiére Pusiéremos }</i>	<i>{</i>	Puésto,	<i>{ When, or God grant I shall put, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Pusiéredeis Pusiéron }</i>			

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos }</i>	<i>{</i>	Puésto,	<i>{ When, or God grant I shall have put, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Huviéredeis Huviéren }</i>			

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ponér, *To put*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér puésto; *To have put*

Gerund.

Poniéndo, *Putting*

Participle Passive.

Puesto

Put, &c.

After this manner are declined in all respects, *Componér*, to compose, *yo compóno*, I compose, *compúse*, I have composed; *Disponér*, to dispose, *dispongo*, I dispose, *dispúse*, I have disposed; *Antepónér*, to set before, *antepóno*, I set before, *antepúse*, I have set before; *Propóner*, to propose, *propóno*, I propose, *propúse*, I proposed; and, if there be any other Verbs derived by Composition from *Porér*.

The Irregular Verb Hacér, To do, or make.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Yo hago</i>	<i>I do or make</i>
	<i>Tu haces</i>	<i>You do or make</i>
	<i>El hace</i>	<i>He does or makes</i>
Plur.	<i>Hacemos</i>	<i>We do or make</i>
	<i>Hacéis</i>	<i>Ye do or make</i>
	<i>Hacén</i>	<i>They do or make</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	<i>Hacía</i>	<i>I did or made, &c.</i>
	<i>Hacías</i>	
	<i>Hacia</i>	
	<i>Hacíamos</i>	
Plur.	<i>Haciadeis, or hacíais</i>	
	<i>Hacían</i>	

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>Hice</i>	<i>I have made, &c.</i>
	<i>Hiciste</i>	
	<i>Hizo</i>	
Plur.		

Plur.	Hicimos	}	We have made, &c.
	Hicisteis		
	Hicieron		

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	He, or húve	}	Hécho, { <i>I have done,</i> <i>or made, &c.</i>
	Has		
	Ha		
Plur.	Hémos, or havémos		
	Haveis		
	Han		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía	}	Hécho, { <i>I had done or made, &c.</i>
	Havías		
	Havía		
Plur.	Havíamos		
	Havíadeis		
	Havían		

First Future.

Sing.	Haré	}	I shall, or will do, or make, &c.
	Harás		
	Hará		
Plur.	Harémos		
	Haréis		
	Harán		

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or téngo de hacér	}	I am to, or must do, or make, &c.
	Has de hacér		
	Ha de hacér		
Plur.	Hémos de hacér		
	Havéys de hacér		
	Han de hacér		

Third Future.

Havré de hacér, I shall be oblig'd to do

Fourth Future.

Havía de hacer

I had, or I was to do

Imperative Mood.

Sing. { Ház, er hágé tu
Hágá el

Plur. { Hagámos nosótrós
Hacéd vosótrós
Hágan éllos

Do or make thou, or do thou
Let him do or make
Let us do or make
Do ye or make ye, let ye do
Let them do or make

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing. { Hágá
Hágas
Hágá
Hagámos
Plur. { Hegáis
Hágan

} *When, or God grant I do or make, &c.*

Preterimperfect.

Sing. { Hiciéra, hiciéssé, haría
Hiciéras, hiciésses, harías
Hiciéra, hiciéssé, haría
Hiciéramos, hiciéssemos, haríamos
Plur. { Hiciéradeis, hiciéssedeis, haríadeis
Hiciéran, hiciéssen, harían

} *When, or would to God I did do or make, &c.*

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya hécho Háyas hécho Háya hécho	When, or God grant I have made, or done, &c.
	{ Hayámos hecho	
Plur.	{ Hayáis hecho	
	{ Hayán hecho	
Sing.	Huviéra, or huviésse	When, or would to God I had done or made, &c.
	Huviéras, or huviésses	
	Huviéra, or huviésse	
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	When, or would to God I had done or made, &c.
	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéras, or huviésses	Hécho, { When, or would to God I had done or made, &c.
	{ Huviéra, or huviésse	
	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Hiciére Hiciéres	When, or God grant I shall or will do or make, &c.
	Hiciére	
	Hiciéremos	
Plur.	Hiciéredeis	
	Hiciéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres	Hécho, { When, or God grant I shall have done or made, &c.
	Huviére	
	Huviéremos	
Plur.	Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Hacér,

To do or make.

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér hécho

To have done or made

Future Tense.

Havér, or esperár de hacér

To make or do hereafter

Gerund.

Haciéndo

Doing or making

Participle Active of the Preter Tense.

Hécho

Made or done, &c.

In the same manner are declined all the Verbs proceeding by composition from *Hacér*, as *Deshacér*, to undo, *Rebacér*, to make again, *Contrabacér*, to counterfeit,

The Irregular Verb, Cabér, To be contained.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo quépo Tu cábes El cábe	I am contained
		You are contained
Plur.	{ Cabémics Cabéis Cáben	He is contained
		We are contained
		Ye are contained
		They are contained

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Cabia Cabias Cabia	I was contained You was contained He was contained
Plur.	{ Cabíamos Cabiadeis Cabian	We were contained Ye were contained They were contained

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Cúpe Cupiste Cúpo	I have been contained You have been contained He has been contained
Plur.	{ Cupimos Cupisteis Cupieron	We have been contained Ye have been contained They have been contained

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve cabido Has cabido Ha cabido	I have been contained You have been contained He has been contained
Plur.	{ Hémos cabido Haveis cabido Han cabido	We have been contained Ye have been contained They have been contained

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havía Havías Havia	Cabido,	I had been contained You had been contained He had been contained
	{ Haviámos Havídeis Havian		We had been contained Ye had been contained They had been contained

First Future.

Plur.	{ Cabró Cabrás Cabrá	I shall or will be contained You shall or will be contained He shall or will be contained
Sing.	{ Cabrémox Cabréis Cabrás	We shall or will be contained Ye shall or will be contained They shall or will be contained

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or téngo de cabér Has de cabér Ha de cabér Hémos de cabér	}	I am to, or must be contained, &c.
	Havéis de cabér		
Plur.	Han de cabér		

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Cábe tu Quépa el	Be you contained Let him be contained
	{ Quepámos nosotros	Let us be contained
Plur.	{ Cabed vosotros Quépan éllos	Be ye contained Let them be contained

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Oxalá, Aunqué.
{ When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Quépa Quépas Quépa	}	When, or God grant I am contained, &c.
	{ Quepámos		
Plur.	Quepáis		
	Quépan		

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	<table> <tr> <td>Cupiéra, cupiésse, cabría</td><td rowspan="3">When, or would to God I was contained, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Cupiéras, cupiésses, cabriás</td></tr> <tr> <td>Cupiéra, cupiésse, cabría</td></tr> </table>	Cupiéra, cupiésse, cabría	When, or would to God I was contained, &c.	Cupiéras, cupiésses, cabriás	Cupiéra, cupiésse, cabría
Cupiéra, cupiésse, cabría	When, or would to God I was contained, &c.				
Cupiéras, cupiésses, cabriás					
Cupiéra, cupiésse, cabría					
Plur.	Cupiéramos, cupiéssemos, cabriamos				
	Cupéradeis, cupiéssedeis, cabriadeis				
	Cupéran, cupiéssen, cabrián				

Preterperfect.

Sing.	<table> <tr> <td>Háya cabido</td><td rowspan="4">When, or God grant I have been contained, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Háyas cabido</td></tr> <tr> <td>Háya cabido</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hayamos cabido</td></tr> </table>	Háya cabido	When, or God grant I have been contained, &c.	Háyas cabido	Háya cabido	Hayamos cabido
Háya cabido	When, or God grant I have been contained, &c.					
Háyas cabido						
Háya cabido						
Hayamos cabido						
Plur.	Háyais cabido					
	Háyan cabido					

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	<table> <tr> <td>Huviéra, or huviésse</td><td rowspan="4">Cabido, { When, or would to God I had been con- tained, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéras, or huviésses</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéra, or huviésse</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéramos, or huviéssemos</td></tr> </table>	Huviéra, or huviésse	Cabido, { When, or would to God I had been con- tained, &c.	Huviéras, or huviésses	Huviéra, or huviésse	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos
Huviéra, or huviésse	Cabido, { When, or would to God I had been con- tained, &c.					
Huviéras, or huviésses						
Huviéra, or huviésse						
Huviéramos, or huviéssemos						
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis					
	Huviéran, or huviéssen					

First Future.

Sing.	<table> <tr> <td>Cupiére</td><td rowspan="4">When, or God grant I shall, or will be contained, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Cupiéres</td></tr> <tr> <td>Cupiére</td></tr> <tr> <td>Cupiéremos</td></tr> </table>	Cupiére	When, or God grant I shall, or will be contained, &c.	Cupiéres	Cupiére	Cupiéremos
Cupiére	When, or God grant I shall, or will be contained, &c.					
Cupiéres						
Cupiére						
Cupiéremos						
Plur.	Cupéredeis					
	Cupiéren					

Second Future.

Sing.	<table> <tr> <td>Huviére, or havré</td><td rowspan="4">Cabido { When, or God grant I may or shall be contained here- after, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéres,</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviére</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéremos</td></tr> </table>	Huviére, or havré	Cabido { When, or God grant I may or shall be contained here- after, &c.	Huviéres,	Huviére	Huviéremos
Huviére, or havré	Cabido { When, or God grant I may or shall be contained here- after, &c.					
Huviéres,						
Huviére						
Huviéremos						
Plur.	Huviéredeis					
	Huviéren					

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Cabér

To be contained.

Preterperfect.

Havér cabido

To have been contained.

Gerund.

Cabiéndo

Being contained.

Participle.

Cabido

*Contained.**The Irregular Verb, Vér, To see.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo véo	I see
	Tu ves	You see
	El ve	He sees
	Vémos	We see
Plur.	Véis	Ye see
	Ven	They see

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Vía, or veía	I did see
	Vías	You did see
	Vía	He did see
	Víamos	We did see
Plur.	Víades	Ye did see
	Vían	They did see

First

First Preterperfect.

	{ Ví, or vide	I saw
Sing.	{ Víste	You saw
	{ Vío	He saw
	{ Vimos	We saw
Plur.	{ Vísteis	Ye saw
	{ Viéron	They saw

Second and Third Preterperfects.

	{ He, or húve visto	I have seen
Sing.	{ Has visto	You have seen
	{ Ha visto	He has seen
	{ Hémos visto	We have seen
Plur.	{ Havéis visto	Ye have seen
	{ Han visto	They have seen

Preterpluperfect.

	{ Havia	I had seen
Sing.	{ Haviás	You had seen
	{ Havia	He had seen
	{ Havíamos	We had seen
Plur.	{ Haviadeis	Ye had seen
	{ Havían	They had seen

First Future.

	{ Veré	I shall or will see
Sing.	{ Verás	You shall or will see
	{ Verá	He shall or will see
	{ Verémos	We shall or will see
Plur.	{ Veréis	Ye shall or will see
	{ Verán	They shall or will see

Second Future.

	{ He, or téngo de vér	I am to or must see
Sing.	{ Has de vér	You are to or must see
	{ Ha de vér	He is to or must see
	{ Hemos de vér	We are to or must see
Plur.	{ Havéis de vér	Ye are to or must see
	{ Han de vér	They are to or must see

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Vée, or vé tu</i>	<i>Do thou see, or see thou</i>
	<i>Véa el</i>	<i>Let him see</i>
	<i>Veámos nosótrós</i>	<i>Let us see</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Ved vosótrós</i>	<i>Do ye see, or let ye see</i>
	<i>Véan éllos</i>	<i>Let them see</i>

The Subjunctive, the Optative, and the Infinitive Moods, altogether as in the other Verbs before, as the Present Tense of the two first Moods *Véa*, the Preterimperfect, *Viéra*, *vería*, *viéssé*; the Preterperfect, *Haya visto*, the Preterpluperfect, *Huvíera*, or *buviéssé visto*; the Future, *Viére*. The Infinitive, *Vér*, Participle, *Visto*.

The Irregular Verb Caér, To fall.**Indicative Mood.****Present Tense.**

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Cáigo</i>	<i>I fall</i>
	<i>Cáes</i>	<i>Thou fallest</i>
	<i>Cáe</i>	<i>He falls</i>
	<i>Caémos</i>	<i>We fall</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Caéis</i>	<i>Ye fall</i>
	<i>Cáen</i>	<i>They fall</i>

Preterimperfect.**Caía, caías, &c.****First Preterperfect.****Cai, caiste, &c.****Second**

Second Preterperfect.

He caído, Has caído, &c.

And so of the other Tenses, like the regular Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Cáe Cáiga	Do you fall, or fall thou Let him fall
Plur.	{ Caigámos Caed Cáigan	Let us fall Do ye fall, or let ye fall Let them fall

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Caér To fall

Gerund.

Cayéndo Falling

The Verb *Entendér*, to understand, in the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood makes *Entiendo* ; Preterperfect, *Entendí*.

Of the Verbs in Cér.

THE following Verbs ending in *cer*, are generally spelt without an *s*, though it were more proper to write them with it before the *c*, which would render them all regular, and more answerable to the *Latin*, from which many of them are derived ; but since we generally find them otherwise, it is proper to note them down here.

Infinitive.

Infinitive.

Adolecer, to grow sick
 Agradecer, to thank
 Amortecer, to dye away
 Desfallecer, to faint
 Apetecer, to desire
 Crecer, to grow
 Encallecer, to wax hard as a Corn
 Encarecer, to magnify
 Establecer, to establish
 Fenecer, to finish
 Pacer, to feed
 Perecer, to perish
 Compadecer, to have Compassion
 Conocer, to know
 Padecer, to suffer
 Ofrecer, to offer
 Guarnecer, to garnish
 Parecer, to appear
 Nacer, to be born
 Enflaquecer, to grow lean
 Enriquecer, to enrich
 Empobrecer, to grow poor
 Endurecer, to grow hard
 Fallecer, to fail or dye
 Engrandecer, to magnify
 Entristecer, to grow melancholy
 Ennoblecer, to ennable
 Florecer, to flourish
 Fortalecer, to strengthen
 Favorecer, to favour
 Obedecer, to obey
 Desvanecer, to make vain
 Ensoberbecer, to grow proud
 Emmudecer, to grow dumb
 Establecer, to establish
 Merecer, to merit.

*Indicative.
Present Tense. Preterperfect.*

Adoiéscō Adoleci
 Agradéscō Agradeci
 Amortéscō Amorteci
 Desfalléscō Desfalleci
 Apetéscō Apeteci
 Créscō Creci
 Encalléscō Encalleci
 Encaréscō Encareci
 Establéscō Estableci
 Fenéscō Feneci
 Pásco Paci
 Peréscō Pereci
 Compadéscō Compadeci
 Conósco Conoci
 Padéscō Padeci
 Ofréscō Ofreci
 Guarnéscō Guarneci
 Paréscō Pareci
 Nasco Naci
 Enflaquecéscō Enflaqueci
 Enriquecéscō Enriqueci
 Empobréscō Empobreci
 Enduréscō Endureci
 Falléscō Falleci
 Engrandéscō Engrandeci
 Entristéscō Entristeci
 Ennobléscō Ennobleci
 Floréscō Floreci
 Fortaléscō Fortaleci
 Favoréscō Favoreci
 Obedéscō Obedeci
 Desvanéscō Desvaneci
 Ensoberbéscō Ensoberbeci
 Emmudéscō Emmudeci
 Establéscō Estableci
 Meréscō Mereci

Except from this general Rule, *Vencér*, to overcome, *Vénzo*, *Vencí*; which shows what was said above, that they might more properly all be writ with an *s* in the infinitive Mood, and present Tense of the indicative Mood, as *Pascér*, from the Latin *Páscere*; *conoscér*, from the Latin *cognoscere*, and

and so of others ; but custom has prevailed to write them as above, and there is no contending against it ; but *Vencér*, cannot admit of the *s*, being derived from the *Latin vincere*, and therefore keeps on without an *s* in all Moods and Tenses.

Of the Verbs in gér.

THE following Verbs which have their Infinitive in *gér*, make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing *g* into *j* ; the same in the third Singular, and the first and third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and through all persons, and both numbers of the Present Tense of the Optative, and the Subjunctive Moods : That is when in the *ultima*, or last syllable there is an *a* or *o*.

Indicative.

Infinitive.

Present Tense. Preterperfect.

Encogér, to shrink,
Recogér, to gather,
Acogér, to entertain,
Escogér, to choose,
Cogér, to catch,

Encójo, Encogi.
Recójo, Recogi.
Acojo, Acogl.
Escojo, Escogi.
Cójo, Cogi.

In other Moods and Tenses, like the Regulars, except the Tenses before mentioned.

Of the Verbs in ér.

THE following Verbs in *ér* make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood by adding *i* in the last syllable but one of the Infinitive, and

162 *The RUDIMENTS of*
 the same in the second and third Persons Singular,
 and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and
 throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and
 the Subjunctive Moods.

Infinitive.

Defendér, *to defend,*
 Hendér, *to cleave asunder,*
 Cernér, *to fist,*
 Entendér, *to understand,*
 Héder, *to stink,*

Indicative,
Present Tense. Preterperfect.

Defiéndo, Defendí.
 Hiéndo, Hendí.
 Ciérno, Cerní.
 Entiéndo, Entendí.
 Hiédo, Hedi.

The next underneath form the Present Tense of the Indicative, by turning *o* in the last Syllable but one of the Infinitive into *ue*; and the same in the second and third Person Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive.

Infinitive,

Volvér, *to turn,*
 Solér, *to be won,*
 Cozér, *to boil,*
 Dolér, *to grieve,*
 Olér, *to smell,*

Indicative,
Present. Preterperfect.

Vuélvo, Volví.
 Suélo, Solí.
 Cuézo, Cozi.
 Duélo, Dolí.
 Huélo, Oli.

The same in all Verbs deriv'd from any of them; as *Revolvér*, to stir about; *Condolér*, to suffer with, &c.

The next are vary'd as follows.

Infinitive.

Caér, *to fall.*
 Roér, *to gnaw,*
 Valér, *to be worth,*

Indicative.

Present Tense. Preterperfect.

Cáigo, Cai.
 Roigo, Roi.
 Váigo, Valí.

Of Verbs Passive of the Second Conjugation.

THEY are formed and conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation ; as *ver*, to see is made passive, thus :

Present. Indicative. Imperfect. Perfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Sói visto} \\ \text{éres visto} \\ \text{es visto} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ia visto} \\ \text{eran visto, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{éra visto} \\ \text{éras visto} \\ \text{éra visto} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ia visto} \\ \text{eran visto, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{éramos visto} \\ \text{éradeis visto} \\ \text{éran visto} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Fui, or he sido visto, &c.} \\ \text{And so the rest of the Tenses.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ia visto} \\ \text{eran visto, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Somos visto} \\ \text{Sóis visto} \\ \text{Son visto} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{eran visto, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$					

Of Verbs Reciprocal.

These Verbs, and all terminated in *erse*, are likewise conjugated as those of the first Conjugation ; as

Perderse, *To lose one's self, to be lost.*

Indicative.

Present. Imperfect. Perfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Me pierdo} \\ \text{Te pierdes} \\ \text{Se pierde} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ia pierde} \\ \text{eran pierde, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Me perdía} \\ \text{Te perdías} \\ \text{Se perdía} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ia pierde} \\ \text{eran pierde, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Me perdi} \\ \text{Te perdiste} \\ \text{Se perdió} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Me perdí} \\ \text{Te perdiste} \\ \text{Se perdió} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ia pierde} \\ \text{eran pierde, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Nos perdemos} \\ \text{Os perdéis} \\ \text{Se pierden} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{eran pierde, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Nos perdíamos} \\ \text{Os perdiades} \\ \text{Se perdían} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{eran pierde, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Nos perdimos} \\ \text{Os perdisteis} \\ \text{Se perdieron} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Nos perdimos} \\ \text{Os perdisteis} \\ \text{Se perdieron} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{eran pierde, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$

and so of the other Tenses.

The Imperative thus :

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Pierdete} \\ \text{Pierdes} \\ \text{Pierde} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Lose yourself.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Perdamosnos} \\ \text{Perdedos} \\ \text{Pierdanse} \end{array} \right\}$	

Note, That the Persons are often doubled in the Conjugation of those Verbs; as, *Yo me pierdo, tu te pierdes, el se pierde, &c.* or thus, *Pierdome, Pierdeste, Perdiése, &c.* by putting the Pronoun after the Verb.

Of Verbs Impersonals.

The Impersonals of this Conjugation are,

Haver, *To be, as in what concerns a Place, &c.*

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Há, or no háy *There is, or there is not.*

Imperfect.

Havia, *There was.*

First Preterperfect.

Huvo, *There was, or there has been.*

Second Perfect.

Ha havido, *There has been.*

Plusperfect.

Havia havido. *There had been.*

Future.

Havrá, *There will, or shall be.*

Second Future.

Há de havér, *There must be.*

and so of the other Futures.

Imperative.

Háya, *Let there be.*

Optative. Present.

Oxalá que háya, *God grant that there be.*

Imperfect.

Que huviéra, &c. *That there might be.*

Perfect.

Que háya havido, *That there hath been.*

Plusperfect.

Que huviéra havido, *That there had been.*

Future.

Que huviére, *That there shall be, &c.*

The Spanish is perfect *Latin* in the Expressions of the impersonal Verbs, which manner cannot be found in the *English*, *French*, and other Languages ; the *English* being obliged to add *there*, or *it*, and the *French* *il*, &c. and this in all the Impersonals throughout all the Conjugations.

Examples.

Hai un hombre que me espéra abáxo para ir à la Comé lia, *There is a Man that stays for me below to go to the Play-house.*

Havía cien soldados en la Emboscada, *There were one hundred Soldiers in the Ambush.*
 No había mas que treinta y dos, *There were no more than thirty-two.*
 Que haya o no haya poco importa, *that there be, or not, is but of little Importance, &c.*

Ser, To be, as in what concerns the Essence, or Qualities of a Thing, &c.

Indicative.

Pres. Es, no es
Imperf. éra,
Perf. Fue,

It is, it is not.
It was.
It hath been.

and so in the other Tenses.

Examples.

Es noche, or es de noche, *It is Night.*
 Es verdad, *It is true.*
 Era así, *It was so.*
 Que sea o no sea, que se me da, *That it be, or not be, what is it to me.*

In the same manner is conjugated the Verb *Ser* *Menestrér*, to be necessary, or requisite, as

Es Menestrér, que yo váya à vér la Ciudad the Londres, pues es un Mundo pequeño, enque florécen tódas las Artes y Ciéncias que están divididas por las quátro partes de el Mundo, *It is necessary that I go to see the City of London, because it is a little World, in which all the Arts and Sciences that are divided in the four Parts of the World do flourish.*

Será Menestrér, que Pédro y Juán se avéngan, *It will be necessary or requisite, that Peter and John agree together.*

Si fuéra Menester, yo vinicra, *I would come if it should be requisite or necessary, &c.*

The Verb Impersonal Placér, To please.

Indicative Mood.

<i>Pres.</i> Pláce,	<i>It pleases.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i> Placíz,	<i>It did please.</i>
<i>First Pers.</i> Plúgo,	<i>It pleased.</i>
<i>Second Pers.</i> Ha Placido,	<i>It has pleased.</i>

and so in the other Tenses.

Imperative.

<i>Plégá,</i>	<i>Let it please, &c.</i>
---------------	-------------------------------

Llovér, To Rain.

<i>Lluéve,</i>	<i>It rains.</i>
<i>Lluvia,</i>	<i>It did rain, &c.</i>

Hedér, To Stink.

<i>Hiéde,</i>	<i>It stinks.</i>
<i>Hedía,</i>	<i>It did stink, &c.</i>

Olér, To smell.

This Verbs changes *o* into *ue* in the Present Tenses, as

<i>Huéle,</i>	<i>It smells.</i>
<i>Huéla,</i>	<i>Let it smell.</i>
<i>Que huéla,</i>	<i>That it may smell, &c.</i>

Acontecer, acaecer, To happen.

<i>Acontece,</i>	<i>It happens, &c.</i>
------------------	----------------------------

Pertenecer, To belong.

<i>Pertenecer,</i>	<i>It belongs, &c.</i>
<i>M 4</i>	<i>Enough</i>

Enough of the Impersonal Actives, let us now put an Example of the Impersonal Passive.

Leérse, To be read.

Se Lee,	<i>It is reading.</i>
Se Leía,	<i>It was reading.</i>
Se Leído,	<i>It has been read, &c.</i>

And so are conjugated *establecerse*, to be established or ordered by Parliament, &c.

Se establece,	<i>It is established.</i>
Se establecía,	<i>It was establishing.</i>
Se establecido	<i>It has been established, &c.</i>
<i>Imperative, Establecése,</i>	<i>Let it be established, &c.</i>

Saberse, To be known.

Se sabe, or sábese,	<i>It is known.</i>
Se sabía, or sabíase,	<i>It was known.</i>
Se supo, or supóse,	<i>It has been known, &c.</i>
<i>Imperative, Sépase,</i>	<i>Let it be known, &c.</i>

N. B. That all the Verbs regular or irregular of the Second Conjugation, may be conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation by the auxiliar Verb *estár*, and the Gerund of the Verb: as,

Present Tense. Indicative.

Sing.	<i>Léo, or estoy Leyéndo</i>	<i>I read, or I am reading, &c.</i>
	<i>Lees, or estás Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Lee, or está Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Leémos, or estámos Leyéndo</i>	
Plur.	<i>Leeís, or estáis Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Léen, or estan Leyéndo</i>	

and so in the rest of the Moods and Tenses.

Of Verbs Regular of the third Conjugation
in ir, as

Subir, *To go up or ascend.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Súbo Súbes Súbe Subimos	} I go up or ascend, &c.
	Subís	
Plur.	Suben	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Subía Subías Subia Subíamos	} I was going up, &c.
Plur.	Subíadeis, or subiais	
	Subían	

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Subí Subiste Subió Subímos	} I went up or ascended, &c.
Plur.	Subísteis Subieron	

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve Has Ha Hémos	} Subido, { I have gone up or ascended, &c.
Plur.	Havéis	
	Han	

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Havia Havias Havia Haviamos	<i>}</i>	Sabido, <i>{</i>
Plur.	Haviadeis Havian		
		<i>}</i>	<i>I had gone up or ascend- ed, &c.</i>

First Future.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Subiré Subirás Subirá	<i>}</i>	<i>I shall or will go up or af- cend, &c.</i>
Plur.	Subirémos Subiréis Subirán		
		<i>}</i>	

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>{</i> He, or tengo de subir Has de subir Ha de subir	<i>}</i>	<i>I am to or must go up or af- cend, &c.</i>
Plur.	Hémos de subir Havéis de subir Han de subir		
		<i>}</i>	

The Third and Fourth Future as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Súbe ta Súba el	<i>Go you up or ascend</i>
		<i>Let him go up or ascend</i>
Plur.	Subámos nosotros	<i>Let us go up or ascend</i>
	Subíd vosotros Súban éllos	<i>Do ye go up or ascend</i> <i>Let them go up or ascend</i>

Subjunctive

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
 { *When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing. { Súba
 Súbas
 Súba
 Subámos } *When or God grant I do go*
Plur. { Subámos
 Subáis
 Súban } *up or ascend, &c.*

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing. { Subiéra, subiésse, or subiría
 Subiéras, subiésses, or subirías
 Subiéra, subiésse, or subiría } *When, or would to*
Plur. { Subiéramos, subiéssemos, or subiríamos } *God I did go up*
 { Subiéradeis, subiéssedeis, or subiríadeis } *or ascend, &c.*
 { Subiéran, subiéssen, or subirían }

Preterperfect.

Sing. { Haya
 Hayas
 Haya
 Hayámos } { Subido, } *When, or God grant I have gone*
Plur. { Hayáis
 Hayan } *up or ascended, &c.*

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing. { Huviéra, or huviésse
 Huviéras, or huviésses
 Huviéra, or huviésse } { Subido, } *When, or*
Plur. { Huviéramos, or huviéssemos } *would to God*
 { Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis } *I had gone up*
 { Huviéran, or huviéssen } *or ascended,*
&c.

First

First Future.

Sing.	<i>{ Subiére Subiéres }</i>	<i>{ When, or God grant I shall or will go up or ascend, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Subiére Subiéremos }</i>	
Plur.	<i>{ Subiéredeis Subiéren }</i>	<i>{ When, or God grant I shall or will go up or ascend, &c.</i>

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres }</i>	<i>{ When, or God grants I shall have gone up or ascended, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Huviére Huviéremos }</i>	
Plur.	<i>{ Huviéredeis Huviéren }</i>	<i>{ When, or God grants I shall have gone up or ascended, &c.</i>

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Subir, *To go up or ascend.*

Preterperfect.

Haver subido, *To have gone up or ascended.*

Future Tense.

Haver o esperar de subir, *To be to go up or ascend hereafter.*

Gerund.

Subiendo, *Going up or ascending.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sube, *Going up or ascending.*

Participle Passive.

Sabido, *Gone up or ascended.*

In

In the same manner all other Regular Verbs of the third Conjugation in *ir*, are conjugated ; as *Sufrir*, to suffer, *Hincbir*, or *Hencbir*, to fill, &c.

These four Verbs, *Abrir*, to open, *Cubrir*, to cover, *Descubrir*, to uncover, and *Encubrir*, to conceal, are Regular, except only in the second Preterperfect Tense ; which, instead of *Abrido*, as other Verbs of this Sort, is *Abierto*, *Cubierto*, *Descubierto*, and *Encubierto*. Next follow

*The Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation,
in ir, as*

Venir, To come.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Véngo Viénes Viéne	I come
		You come
		He comes
Plur.	{ Venimos Venis	We come
		Ye come
	Viénen	They come

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Venía Venías Venía	}	I did come, &c.		
Plur.	{ Veníamos Veníadeis, or veníazis				

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Víne	I came
	Veniste	You came
	Víno	He came
	Venimos	We came
Plur.	Venísteis	Ye came
	Veniéron	They came

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or húve	}	Venido, { I have come, &c.
	Has		
	Ha		
	Hémos		
Plur.	Havéis		
	Han		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia	}	Venido, { I had come, &c.
	Havías		
	Havía		
	Havíamos		
Plur.	Haviadeis		
	Havían		

First Future.

Sing.	Vendré, or verné	}	I shall, or will come, &c.
	Vendrás, or vernás		
	Vendrá, or verná		
	Vendrémos, or vernémos		
Plur.	Vendréis, or verneis		
	Vendrán, or vernán		

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de venir	}	I am to, or must come, &c.
	Has de venir		
	Ha de venir		
	Hémos de venir		
Plur.	Havéis de venir		
	Han de venir		

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Ven tu Vénga el	Do you come, or come thou Let him come
Plur.	{ Vengámos nosotros Venid vosotros Vengan ellos	Let us come Do ye come, or let ye come Let them come

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.
 { When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Vénga Véngas Vénga Vengámos	When, or God grant I do come, &c.
Plur.	{ Vengáis Véngan	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Viniéra, viniéssse, vernía, or ven- dría Viniéras, viniéssses, vernías, or vendrías Viniéra, viniéssse, vernía, or ven- dría	When, or would to God I did come, &c.
Plur.	{ Viniéramos, viniésssemos, vernía- mos, or vendríamos Viniéradeis, viniéssedeis, vernía- deis, or vendríadeis Viniéran, viniéssen, vernían, or vendrían	

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Háya} \\ \text{Háyas} \\ \text{Háya} \\ \text{Hayámos} \end{array} \right\}$	Venido,	<i>When, or God grant I have come, &c.</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hayáis} \\ \text{Háyan} \end{array} \right\}$		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huviéra, or huviéssse} \\ \text{Huviéras, or huviéssses} \\ \text{Huviéra, or huviéssse} \\ \text{Huviéramos, or huviésssemos} \end{array} \right\}$	Venido,	<i>When, or would to God I had come, &c.</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huviéradeis, or huviéssledeis} \\ \text{Huviérán, or huviéssen} \end{array} \right\}$		

First Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Viniére} \\ \text{Viniéres} \\ \text{Viniére} \\ \text{Viniéremos} \end{array} \right\}$	Venido	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will come, &c.</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Viniéredeis} \\ \text{Viniéren} \end{array} \right\}$		

Second Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huviére, or havré} \\ \text{Huviéres,} \\ \text{Huviére} \\ \text{Huviéremos} \end{array} \right\}$	Venido	<i>When, or God grant I shall or have come, &c.</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huviéredeis} \\ \text{Huviéren} \end{array} \right\}$		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Venir,

To come.

Future.

Future.

Haver de venir, *To be to come:*

Gerund.

Viniendo, *Coming.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que viene, *He that comes.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Venido, *Come.*

The Compounds of this Verb *Venir*, are declined in every respect in all Moods and Tenses throughout as their original ; as *Revenir*, to return, *Revengo*, *Revine*, &c. *Convenir*, to agree, *Convengo*, *Convine*, &c. *Devenir*, to become, *Devengo*, *Devine*, &c. *Sobrevenir*, to come upon suddenly, *Sobrevengo*, *Sobrevine*, &c.

The Irregular Verb, Decir, *To say.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Digo	I say
	Dices	You say
	Dice	He says
	Decimos	We say
Plur.	Decis	Ye say
	Dicen	They say

N

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Decía Decías Decía Decíamos	I did say You did say He did say We did say
Plur.	{ Decíadeis, or decíais Decian	Ye did say They did say

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Díxe Dixiste Dixo Diximos	I said You said He said We said
Plur.	{ Dixisteis Dixéron	Ye said They said

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve dicho Has dicho Ha dicho	I have said You have said He has said
Plur.	{ Hémos dicho Havéis dicho Han dicho	We have said Ye have said They have said

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havia Havías Havia	Dicho,	I had said
	{ Haviamos Haviadeis		You had said He had said We had said Ye had said They had said
Plur.	{ Havia Havías Havia	Dicho,	I had said
	{ Haviamos Haviadeis		You had said He had said We had said Ye had said They had said

First Future.

Sing.	{ Diré Dirás Dirá	I shall or will say
	{ Dirémos Diréis	You shall or will say
Plur.	{ Dirémos Diréis	He shall or will say
	{ Dirán	We shall or will say
		Ye shall or will say
		They shall or will say

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or tengo de decir Has de decir Ha de decir	I am to or must say You are to or must say He is to or must say
Plur.	{ Hemos de decir Havéis de decir Han de decir	We are to or must say Ye are to or must say They are to or must say

the rest as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Di tu, or dices tu Diga el	Do thou say Let him say
Plur.	{ Digámos nosotros Décid vosotros Digan ellos	Let us say Do ye say Let them say

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Diga Dígas Diga Digámos	When, or God grant I do say, &c.
Plur.	{ Digáis Digan	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Dixéra, dixéisse, diríz Dixéras, dixésses, dirías	When, or would to God I did say, &c.
	{ Dixéra, dixéisse, diría	
Plur.	{ Dixéramos, dixéssemos, diríamos	
	{ Dixéradeis, dixéssedeis, diríadeis Dixérant, dixéssent, dirían	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Haya dicho Háyas dicho Háya dicho Hayámos dicho	<i>{</i> When, or God grant I have said, &c.
	Hayáis dicho Hayán dicho	
Plur.		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Huviéra, or huviéssse Huviéras, or huviéssses Huviéra, or huviéssse	<i>{</i> Dicho, <i>{</i> When, or would to God I had said, &c.
	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	
Plur.	<i>{</i> Huviéradeis, or huviéssedecis Huviétan, or huviéssen	

First Future.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Dixére Dixéres	<i>{</i> When, or God grant I shall or will say, &c.
	Dixére	
Plur.	<i>{</i> Dixéremos Dixéredeis	
	Dixéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Huviére, or havré Huviéres	<i>{</i> Dicho, <i>{</i> When, or God grant I shall have said, &c.
	Huviére Huviéremos	
Plur.	<i>{</i> Huviéredeis Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dcir,

To say.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dicho, *To have said.*

Future Tense.

Avér de decir, *To be to say hereafter.*

Gerund.

Diciéndo, *Saying.*

Participle Active of the Present Tense.

El que dice, *One saying.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dicho, *Said.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or esperá de decir, *He that is to say hereafter.*

The Compounds of this Verb *Decir*, in all Points, through all Moods and Tenses, are declined like the Simple, as,

Bendecir, *to bless,*
Maldecir, *to curse,*
Desdecir, *to unsay,*

Bendigo,
Maldigo,
Desdigo,

Bendíxe.
Maldíxe.
Desdíxe.

The Irregular Verb, Ir, To go.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Voi Vas Va	I go You go He goes
Plur.	{ Vamos Vais Van	We go Ye go They go

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Ita 'Ibas 'Iba	I did go You did go He did go
Plur.	{ Ibamos 'Ibais 'Iban	We did go Ye did go They did go

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Fuí Fuíste Fué	I went You went He went
Plur.	{ Fuímos Fuísteis Fuérón	We went Ye went They went

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or huve Has	} 'Ido,	{ I have gone, &c.
	{ Ha		
	{ Hémos		
Plur.	{ Havéis		

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	}	'Ido,	{ <i>I had gone, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ Haviadeis Havían			

First Future.

Sing.	{ Iré Irás Irá	}	I shall or will go, &c.
	{ Irémos Iréis		
Plur.	Irán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or tengo de ir Has de ir Ha de ir	}	I must or am to go, &c.
	{ Hémos de ir Havéis de ir		
Plur.	Han de ir		

the Rest of the Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Ve tu Váya el	Do you go
	{ Vámos nosotros	Let <i>him</i> go
Plur.	Id vosotros	Let <i>us</i> go
	Váyan ellos	Do <i>ye</i> go

Let *them* go

Subjunctive and Optative Mood,

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
 { *When, Though, Would to God,*

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ V áya Váyas Váya Váyamos Váyais Váyan	{ W hen, or God grant I do go, &c.
------------------------------	---	--

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ F uéra, fuésse, iría Fuéras, fuésses, irías Fuéra, fuésse, iría Fuéramos, fuéssemos, iríamos Fuéradeis, fuéssedeis, iríadeis Fuéran, fuéssen, irían	{ W hen, or would to God I did go, &c.
------------------------------	---	---

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ H áya Háyas Háya Hayámos Hayáis Háyan	{ í do,	{ W hen, or God grant I have gone, &c.
------------------------------	---	--	--

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ H uviéra, or huviésse Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen	{ í do,	{ W hen, or would to God I had gone, &c.
------------------------------	--	--	--

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Fuére} \\ \text{Fuéres} \\ \text{Fuére} \\ \text{Fuéremos} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will go, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Fuéredeis} \\ \text{Fuéren} \end{array} \right\}$	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huviére, or havré} \\ \text{Huviéres} \\ \text{Huviére} \\ \text{Huviéremos} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have gone, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Huviéredeis} \\ \text{Huviéren} \end{array} \right\}$	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ir, *To go.*

Preterperfect.

Haver ido, *To have gone.*

Future Tense.

Haver de ir, *To be to go hereafter.*

Gerund.

Yéndo, *Going.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que va, *He that is going.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

ido, *Gone.* *The*

The Irregular Verb, Oír, To bear.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ 'Oigo 'Oyes Oye	I bear You bear He bears
	{ Oímos Oís 'Oyen	We bear Ye bear They bear

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Oia Oias Oia	I did bear You did bear He did bear
	{ Oiamos Oiais Oian	We did bear Ye did bear They did bear

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Oí Oíste Oyó	I heard You heard He heard
Plur.	{ Oímos Oísteis Oyéron	We heard Ye heard They heard

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve Has Ha	}	Oido, { I have heard, &c.
	{ Hémos		
Plur.	{ Havéis		
	{ Han		

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia	}	Oido,	{
	Havias			
Plur.	Havia	}	I bad beard, &c.	{
	Haviamos			
	Haviadeis	}		{
	Havian			

First Future.

Sing.	Oiré	}	I shall, or will bear, &c.	{
	Oirás			
Plur.	Oirá	}		{
	Oirámos			
	Oiréis	}		{
	Oirán			

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de oír	}	I must, or am to bear, &c.	{
	Has de oír			
Plur.	Ha de oír	}		{
	Hémos de oír			
	Havéis de oír	}		{
	Han de oír			

the Third and Fourth as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	'Oye tu	Do you bear
	'Oiga aquél	Let him bear
Plur.	Oigámos nosótros	Let us bear
	Oíd vosótros	Do ye bear
	'Oigan aquéllos	Let them bear

Subjunctive

Subjunctive and Optative Moods with the Signs.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.*
 { *When, Though, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ 'Oiga 'Oigas 'Oiga Oigámos <i>Plur.</i> { Oigáis 'Oigan	}	<i>When, or God grant I do bear, &c.</i>
------------------------------	---	---	--

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ Oyéra, oyéssé, or oiría Oyéras, oyésses, or oirías Oyéra, oyéssé, or oiría { Oyéramos, oyéssemos, or oiríamos <i>Plur.</i> { Oyéradeis, oyéssedeis, or oiríadeis Oyéran, oyéssen, or oirian	}	<i>When, or would to God I did bear, &c.</i>
------------------------------	---	---	--

Preterperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ Háya Háyas Háya Hayámos <i>Plur.</i> { Hayáis Háyan	}	<i>Oido,</i> { <i>When, or God grant I have heard, &c.</i>
------------------------------	---	---	---

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssé { Huviéramos, or huviéssemos <i>Plur.</i> { Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huvierán, or huviéssen	}	<i>Oido,</i> { <i>When, or would to God I had beard, &c.</i>
------------------------------	--	---	---

First

First Future.

Sing.	{ Oyére Oyéres Oyére	When, or God grant I shall, or will bear, &c.
	{ Oyéremos	
Plur.	{ Oyéredeis	
	{ Oyéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére	Oido, { When, or God grant I shall or will have heard, &c.
	{ Huviéremos	
Plur.	{ Huviéredeis	
	{ Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Oír, *To hear.*

Preterperfect.

Havér oido, *To have heard.*

Future.

Havér de oír, *To be to bear hereafter.*

Gerund.

Oyéndo, *Hearing.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Oyénte, or el que oye, *He that is hearing.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Oido, *Heard.*

The Irregular Verb, Herír, To hurt or wound.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Hiéro	I wound
	Hiéres	You wound
	Hiére	He wounds
	Herímos	We wound
Plur.	Herís	Ye wound
	Hiéren	They wound

All the other Tenses of the Indicative Mood are as in Verbs Regular ; as

Preterimperfect.

Hería, Herías, &c. I did wound, &c.

First Preterperfect.

Herí, Heriste, &c. I wounded, &c.

Second Preterperfect.

He, has, &c. herido, I have wounded, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Havía, havías, &c. herido, I had wounded, &c.

First Future.

Heríe, Herirás, &c. I will or shall wound, &c.

Second Future.

He or téngo, &c. de herír, I, &c. am to or must wound, &c.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hiére tu} \\ \text{Hiéra el} \end{array} \right.$	<i>Do you strike or wound</i>
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hirámos nosótros} \\ \text{Herid vosótros} \end{array} \right.$	<i>Let us strike or wound</i>
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hiéran éllas} \\ \text{Hiéran éllos} \end{array} \right.$	<i>Let them strike or wound</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hiéra} \\ \text{Hiéras} \\ \text{Hiéra} \\ \text{Hirámos} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\} \text{When, or God grant I do wound, &c.} \right.$
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hiráis} \\ \text{Hiéran} \end{array} \right.$	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hiriéra, hiriéssse, or heriría} \\ \text{Hiriéras, hiriéssses, or herirías} \\ \text{Hiriéra, hiriéssse, or heriría} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\} \text{When, or would to God I did wound, &c.} \right.$
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hiriéramos, hiriésssemos, or heriríamos} \\ \text{Hiriéradeis, hiriéssedeis, or heriríadeis} \\ \text{Hiriéran, hiriéssen, or heririan} \end{array} \right.$	

Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hiriére} \\ \text{Hiriéres} \\ \text{Hiriére} \\ \text{Hiriéremos} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\} \text{When, or would to God I shall or will wound, &c.} \right.$
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Hiriéredeis} \\ \text{Hiriéren} \end{array} \right.$	

The other Tenses as in Regular Verbs. The Infinitive Mood the same. The Gerund *Hiriéndo*, Wounding.

The

*The Irregular Verbs, Dormír, to sleep, and
Morír, to dye.*

Dormír, To sleep.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Duérmo Duérmes Duérme	I sleep You sleep He sleeps
Plur.	{ Dormímos Dormís Duérmen	We sleep Ye sleep They sleep

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Dormía Dormías Dormía	I did sleep You did sleep He did sleep
Plur.	{ Dormíamos Dormíadeis Dormían	We did sleep Ye did sleep They did sleep

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Dormí Dormiste Durmió	I slept You slept He slept
Plur.	{ Dormimos Dormísteis Durmieron	We slept Ye slept They slept

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve dormido Has dormido Ha dormido	I have slept You have slept He has slept
Plur.	{ Hemos dormido Havéis dormido Han dormido	We have slept Ye have slept They have slept

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía	}	Dormido,	<i>I had slept, &c.</i>
	Havías			
	Havía			
	Havíamos			
Plur.	Haviadeis			
	Havían			

First Future.

Sing.	Dormiré	}	<i>I shall or will sleep, &c.</i>
	Dormirás		
	Dormirá		
	Dormirémos		
Plur.	Dormiréis		
	Dormirán		

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de dormir	}	<i>I am to or must sleep, &c.</i>
	Has de dormir		
	Ha de dormir		
	Hémos de dormir		
Plur.	Havéis de dormir		
	Han de dormir		

The other Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Duérmate tu	}	<i>Do you sleep</i>
	Dúérma		
	Durmámos		
Plur.	Dormid		
	Dúérman		

Let him sleep
Let us sleep
Do ye sleep
Let them sleep

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Duérma Duérmas Duérma Durmámos	} When, or God grant I do sleep, &c.
	Durmáis	
Plur.	Duérman	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Durmiéra, durmiéssse, or dormiría Durmiéras, durmiéssses, or dormirías Durmiéra, durmiéssse, or dormiría	} When, or would to God I did sleep, &c.
	Durmíramos, durmiésssemos, or dormiríramos	
Plur.	Durmíradeis, durmiéssedeis, or dormiríadeis	
	Durmíran, durmiéssen, or dormirian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya dormido Hayas dormido Haya dormido	} When, or God grant I have slept, &c.
	Hayámos dormido	
Plur.	Hayáis dormido	
	Háyan dormido	

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssse Huviéras, or huviéssses Huviéra, or huviéssse	} When, or would to God I had slept, &c.
	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First

First Future.

Sing.	Durmiére Durmiéres Durmiére Durmiéremos	When, or God grant I shall or will sleep, &c.
	Durmiéremos	
Plur.	Durmiéredeis	
	Durmiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos	When, or God grant I shall or will have slept, &c.
	Huviéremos	
Plur.	Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dormir, *To sleep.*

Preterperfect.

Havér dormido, *To have slept.*

Future Tense.

Havér de dormir, *To be to sleep.*

Gerund.

Durmiéndo, *Sleeping.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Dormiente, or el que Duérme, *He that is sleeping.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dormido, *Slept.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espéra de dormir, *About to sleep hereafter.*

Morír,**To dye.****Indicative Mood.****Present Tense.**

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Muéro</i>	<i>I dye</i>
	<i>Muéres</i>	<i>You dye</i>
	<i>Muéte</i>	<i>He dyes</i>
	<i>Morímos</i>	<i>We dye</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Moris</i>	<i>Ye dye</i>
	<i>Muéren</i>	<i>They dye</i>

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Moria</i>	<i>I did dye</i>
	<i>Morias</i>	<i>You did dye</i>
	<i>Moria</i>	<i>He did dye</i>
	<i>Moríamos</i>	<i>We did dye</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Moriais</i>	<i>Ye did dye</i>
	<i>Morian</i>	<i>They did dye</i>

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Morí</i>	<i>I dy'd</i>
	<i>Moriste</i>	<i>You dy'd</i>
	<i>Murió</i>	<i>He dy'd</i>
	<i>Morímos</i>	<i>We dy'd</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Moristeis</i>	<i>Ye dy'd</i>
	<i>Muriéron</i>	<i>They dy'd</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He, or húve muérto</i>	<i>I have dy'd</i>
	<i>Has muérto</i>	<i>You have dy'd</i>
	<i>Ha muérto</i>	<i>He has dy'd</i>
	<i>Hémos muérto</i>	<i>We have dy'd</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Havéis muérto</i>	<i>Ye have dy'd</i>
	<i>Han muérto</i>	<i>They have dy'd</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havía} \\ \text{Havías} \\ \text{Havía} \\ \text{Havíamos} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Muérto,} \\ \text{I had dy'd, \&c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Haviadeis} \\ \text{Havían} \end{array} \right\}$	

First Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Moriré} \\ \text{Morirás} \\ \text{Morirá} \\ \text{Morirémos} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I shall, or will dye,} \\ \text{\&c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Moriréis} \\ \text{Morirán} \end{array} \right\}$	

Second Future.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{He or téngo de morir} \\ \text{Has de morir} \\ \text{Ha de morir} \\ \text{Hémos de morir} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I am to, or must dye, \&c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havéis de morir} \\ \text{Han de morir} \end{array} \right\}$	

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Muére} \\ \text{Muéra} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Do you dye} \\ \text{Let him dye} \end{array} \right\}$
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Murámos} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Let us dye} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Moríd} \\ \text{Muéran} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Do ye dye} \\ \text{Let them dye} \end{array} \right\}$

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Muéra</td><td rowspan="3">When, or God grant I do dye, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Muéras</td></tr> <tr> <td>Muéra</td></tr> </table>	Muéra	When, or God grant I do dye, &c.	Muéras	Muéra
Muéra	When, or God grant I do dye, &c.				
Muéras					
Muéra					
Plur.	Murámos				
	Muráis				
	Muérnan				

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Muriéra, muriéssle, or mori- ría</td><td rowspan="3">When, or would to God I did dye, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Muriéras, muriéssles, or mori- rias</td></tr> <tr> <td>Muriéra, muriéssle, or mori- ría</td></tr> </table>	Muriéra, muriéssle, or mori- ría	When, or would to God I did dye, &c.	Muriéras, muriéssles, or mori- rias	Muriéra, muriéssle, or mori- ría
Muriéra, muriéssle, or mori- ría	When, or would to God I did dye, &c.				
Muriéras, muriéssles, or mori- rias					
Muriéra, muriéssle, or mori- ría					
Plur.	Muriéramos, muriésssemos, or moriríamos				
	Muriéradeis, muriéssdeis, or moriríadeis				
	Muriéran, muriéssen, or mori- rian				

Preterperfect.

Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Háya muerto</td><td rowspan="3">When, or God grant I have dy'd, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Háyas muerto</td></tr> <tr> <td>Háya muerto</td></tr> </table>	Háya muerto	When, or God grant I have dy'd, &c.	Háyas muerto	Háya muerto
Háya muerto	When, or God grant I have dy'd, &c.				
Háyas muerto					
Háya muerto					
Plur.	Hayámos muerto				
	Hayáis muerto				
	Háyan muerto				

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Huviéra, or huviéssle</td><td rowspan="3">Muerto,</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéras, or huviéssles</td></tr> <tr> <td>Huviéra, or huviéssle</td></tr> </table>	Huviéra, or huviéssle	Muerto,	Huviéras, or huviéssles	Huviéra, or huviéssle
Huviéra, or huviéssle	Muerto,				
Huviéras, or huviéssles					
Huviéra, or huviéssle					
Plur.	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos				
	Huviéradeis, or huviéssdeis				
	Huviéran, or huviéssen				

First

First Future.

Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr><td>Muriére</td></tr> <tr><td>Muriéres</td></tr> <tr><td>Muriére</td></tr> </table>	Muriére	Muriéres	Muriére	}	When, or God grant I shall, or will dye, &c.
Muriére						
Muriéres						
Muriére						
	<table border="0"> <tr><td>Muriéremos</td></tr> <tr><td>Muriéredeis</td></tr> <tr><td>Muriéren</td></tr> </table>	Muriéremos	Muriéredeis	Muriéren		
Muriéremos						
Muriéredeis						
Muriéren						
Plur.	<table border="0"> <tr><td>Muriéremos</td></tr> <tr><td>Muriéredeis</td></tr> <tr><td>Muriéren</td></tr> </table>	Muriéremos	Muriéredeis	Muriéren		
Muriéremos						
Muriéredeis						
Muriéren						

Second Future.

Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr><td>Huviére, or havré</td></tr> <tr><td>Huviéres</td></tr> <tr><td>Huviére</td></tr> </table>	Huviére, or havré	Huviéres	Huviére	}	When, or God grant I shall, or will have dy'd, &c.
Huviére, or havré						
Huviéres						
Huviére						
	<table border="0"> <tr><td>Huviéremos</td></tr> <tr><td>Huviéredeis</td></tr> <tr><td>Huviéren</td></tr> </table>	Huviéremos	Huviéredeis	Huviéren		
Huviéremos						
Huviéredeis						
Huviéren						
Plur.	<table border="0"> <tr><td>Huviéremos</td></tr> <tr><td>Huviéredeis</td></tr> <tr><td>Huviéren</td></tr> </table>	Huviéremos	Huviéredeis	Huviéren		
Huviéremos						
Huviéredeis						
Huviéren						

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Morir, To dye.

Preterperfect.

Havér muerto, To have dy'd.

Future Tense.

Havér de morir, To be to dye.

Gerund.

Muriéndo, Dying.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que muére, He that is dying.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Muérto, Dyed.

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que há, or espéra de morir, About to dye hereafter.

The following Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation, change *e* of the Penultima or last Syllable but one of the infinitive Mood into *i*, in the first, second, and third Persons singular, and the third Person plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood; the second and third Persons singular, and the first and third plural of the Imperative Mood; and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Moods; thus,

Servir, to serve, *Sírvo*, I serve, *Sírves*, *Sírve*, *Servímos*, *Servís*, *Sírven*. Imperative, *Sírve*, *Sírvá*, *Sírvámos*, *Servid*, *Sírvan*. Optative and Subjunctive, *Sírva*, *Sírvas*, &c. All other Tenses in each Mood as the regular Verbs. The others that are conjugated after this manner; are,

<i>Reír</i> , To laugh,	<i>Ríó</i> , I laugh,	<i>Ríes</i> , Ríe, &c.
<i>Concebír</i> , To conceive,	<i>Concíbo</i> , I conceive,	<i>Concíbes</i> , Concíbe, &c.
<i>Gemír</i> , To sigh,	<i>Gímo</i> , I sigh,	<i>Gímes</i> , Gíme, &c.

The next that follow add *i* before *e* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above; as

<i>Advertír</i> , To take notice,	<i>Adviértó</i> , I take notice,	<i>Adviértes</i> , &c.
<i>Arrepentír</i> , To repent,	<i>Arrepiénto</i> , I repent,	<i>Arrepiéntes</i> , &c.
<i>Consentír</i> , To consent,	<i>Consiénto</i> , I consent,	<i>Consiéntes</i> , &c.
<i>Mentír</i> , To lie,	<i>Miénto</i> , I lie,	<i>Miéntes</i> , &c.

The Verbs *Elegír*, To chuse, and *Regír*, To rule, change *eg* into *ij* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above; thus *Elegír*, *Elijo*; *Regír*, *Rijo*.

Fingír, To feign, and *Ungír*, To anoint, in the same manner make *Fínjo*, and *Unjo*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mention'd.

Siguír, To follow, makes *Sígo*, *Sígues*, *Sigue*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above.

These that follow in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mentioned, are conjugated as here noted.

Conducír,

Conducir, To conduct, *Condúzgo*, *Condúces*, *Condúce*, *Condúcimos*, *Conducís*, *Condúcon*. Preterperfect, *Condúxe*, *Condúxiste*, &c. Optative and Subjunctive, Present, *Condúzga*. Preterimperfect, *Conduxéra*, or *Conduxésse*. Future, *Conduxére*. In the same manner, *Introducir*, *Inducir*, *Traducir*, and *Producir*.

Salir, To go out. Present, Indicative. *Sálgo*, *Sáles*, *Sále*, *Salímos*, *Salís*, *Sálen*. Imperative Mood, *Sal*, or *Sále*, *Sálga*, *Salgámos*, *Salid*, *Sálgan*. Optative and Subjunctive Present, *Sálga*, *Sálgas*, &c. The rest Regular.

Of Verbs Passive, Ser oido, To be heard.

Indicative.

Present.

Imperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Sói oido} \\ \text{Eres oido} \\ \text{Es oido} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{'Era oido} \\ \text{'Eras oido} \\ \text{'Era oido} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Sómos oídos} \\ \text{Sóis oídos} \\ \text{Son oídos} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{'Eramos oídos} \\ \text{'Erais oídos} \\ \text{'Eran oídos} \end{array} \right\}$

I am bearded. *I was bearded.*

Perfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Fui, or hé sido oido} \\ \text{Fuiste, or has sido oido} \\ \text{Fué, or ha sido oido} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Fui, or hé sido oido} \\ \text{Fuiste, or has sido oido} \\ \text{Fué, or ha sido oido} \\ \text{Fuimos, or hémos sido oídos} \\ \text{Fuisteis, or havéis sido oídos} \\ \text{Fuérón, or han sido oídos, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Fuimos, or hémos sido oídos} \\ \text{Fuisteis, or havéis sido oídos} \\ \text{Fuérón, or han sido oídos, &c.} \end{array} \right\}$	

I have been bearded, &c.

The Reciprocal thus :

Reirse, To Laugh.

Present

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Me río Te ríes Se ríe Nos reímos }
Plur.	{ Os reís Se rién }

Preterimperfect.

{ Me reía Te reías Se reían Nos reíamos }
{ Os reíadeis Se reían, &c. }

Introducirse, To be introduced.

Present.

Sing.	{ Me introduzgo Te introducés Se introduce Nos introducimos }
Plur.	{ Os introducís Se introducen }

Imperfect.

{ Me introducía Te introducías Se introducía Nos introducíamos }
{ Os introducíais Se introducían }

I was introduced.

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Me introduxe, or heme introducido Te introduxiste, or haste introducido Se introduxo, or hase introducido Nos introduximos, or hemosnos introducido, or nos hémox introducido }
Plur.	{ Os introduxisteis, or os havéis introducido Se introduxeron, or se han introducido }

I have been introduced, or I introduced myself.

Imperative.

Sing.	{ Introducete tu Introduzgase el }
Plur.	{ Introduzgamones nosótrous Introducé os vosótrous Introduzganse aquéllos }

*Be introduced thou
Let him be introduced
Let us be introduced
Be ye introduced
Let them be introduced*

And so in the rest of the Reciprocals, which are terminated in *se* in the Infinitive, except the Impersonal Passive.

Impersonal

Impersonal Actives.

Convenír, To be convenient, fit, or proper.

Indicative.

Pres. Conviene *It is convenient*

Imperf. Convenia *It was convenient*

First Perf. Convino } *It has been convenient*

Second Perf. Ha convenido }

Plusperf. Havia convenido *It had been convenient*

First Future, Convendrá *It will be convenient*

Second Future, Há de convenir *It must be convenient*

Imperative, Convenga *Let it be convenient, &c.*

Cumplir, To behave.

Present. Cumple *It behaves.*

Imperfect. Cumplía *It did behave.*

First Perfect. Cumplió *It behoveth.*

Second Perfect. Ha cumplido *It has behaved.*

Plusperfect. Havia cumplido *It had behaved.*

Future. Cumplirá, *It will behave.*

and so through the third Person of the other Moods. It is to be observed, that this Verb *Cumplir*, is given here as Impersonal, only in this Signification of *Behoving*, or *being meet*; for *Cumplir*, when

204 *The RUDIMENTS of*
when it signifies *to compleat*, or *fulfill*, is a regular
Verb, and has all its Persons accordingly.

Of the Impersonal Passives.

Decirse, To be said.

Indicative.

<i>Present.</i> Se dice, or dicese	<i>It is said.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Se decía	<i>It was said.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Se díxo	<i>It was, or has been said.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Se há dicho	<i>It has been said.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Se havía dicho	<i>It had been said.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Se dirá	<i>It shall, or will be said, &c.</i>

After the same Manner are conjugated,

Escribirse, To be written.

<i>Present.</i> Se escribe,	<i>It is written.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------

Referirse, To be related or referred.

<i>Present.</i> Se Refiere,	<i>It is related, or referred, &c.</i>
-----------------------------	--

The Verbs of this Conjugation are likewise declined by the Verb *Estar* and the Gerund, as

'Oigo, or estóí oyéndo,	<i>I hear, or I am bearing.</i>
Escribo, or estóí escribiéndo,	<i>I write, or I am writing.</i>
Pido, or estóí pidiéndo, &c.	<i>I beg, or I am begging.</i>

There

There are likewise some few Defective Verbs in the *Spanish* Tongue, which are perfect *Latin*, viz.

Sálve, hail, God save you, which is a saluting Verb, much used in their Prayers to the Virgin *Mary*, and in Poetry, and has no other Tense in *Spanish* than the Imperative.

'Ave, All hail, God save you, &c. is likewise used in *Spanish*, and found in several Books in a saluting manner, but never used otherwise than at Prayers, &c.

Vále, farewell, adieu, God be with you, is much used by the *Spaniards*, especially in writing, instead of *Your most Obedient Humble Servant*; and has but two Persons in the Imperative Mood, viz. *Vále*, and *Valéte*.

This may suffice as to Verbs, the Necessity of giving an Account of the Irregulars, and Impersonals having taken up much time.

CHAP. IV.

Of Participles.

ALTHO' there has been said enough of the Participles, as to what concerns the Grammar, in the third Chapter before the Conjugation of Verbs; yet I think it proper to observe,

That this Name *Participle*, comes from the *Latin Participium*, and is so called for its partaking of the Verb and Noun, as it has been said before.

Some are Simple, and others Compound, as

Andante,
Comandante,

Doña.
Indoña.

All the *Spanish* Verbs have not the Participles Present, and of the Future; and they are supplied by *elque*, and the third Person Singular of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, &c. as it is observed before.

Note, That the Participles of the Present Tense are often made Nouns in *Spanish*, as *Oyénte*, *Escribiente*, *Antecedente*, &c.

C H A P. V.

Of Adverbs.

Having treated at large of the four declinable Parts of Speech, we now come to the four that are undeclinable; the first of which is the Adverb, (and so called because it is joined to Verbs, to declare the manner, or the Circumstances of the Action, or Passion; as *el Dánza*, or *Báila bien*, he dances well; *el pudeció cruelmente*, he suffer'd cruelly: it often explains likewise the Nouns, as *un bóm̄bre muy sábio*, a very learned Man; *Totalmente impudente*, intirely impudent, &c.

Of Adverbs there are several Sorts, some being Primitives, as *Si*, Yes; *No*, No, &c. Others are Derivatives, as particularly those which proceed from the Feminine Gender of Adjectives, as from *álta*, high, *altamente*, highly; from *graciosa*, pretty, *graciosamente*, prettily; or from those in *ente*, *z*, *al*, *il*, &c. as *prudentemente*, prudently; *Felizmente*, happily; *Moralmente*, morally; *Facilmente*, easily, &c.

There are Adverbs of Quality, of Quantity, of Time, &c. as may be seen here following,

Adverbs of Quality.

Fielmente, <i>faithfully</i>	Santamente, <i>holily</i>
Buenamente, or bien, <i>well</i>	Fieramente, <i>fiercely, &c.</i>
Malamente, or mal, <i>ill</i>	

And so the like may be form'd of all Adjectives.

Adverbs of Quantity.

Mucho, <i>much</i>	Pordemás, <i>to no purpose</i>
Poco, <i>little</i>	Demasiado, <i>too much</i>
Mas, <i>more</i>	

Adverbs of Time.

Hoi, <i>to day</i>	Nunca, or jamás, <i>never</i>
Ahiér, <i>yesterday</i>	Quando, <i>when</i>
Mañana, <i>to morrow</i>	Siempre, <i>always</i>
Antehier, <i>the day before yesterday</i>	Entonces, <i>then</i>
Mucho ha, <i>long since</i>	Mientras, <i>whilst</i>
Poco ha, <i>lately</i>	Súbito, or repentinamente, <i>suddenly</i>
Ahóra, <i>now</i>	Tárde, <i>late</i>
'Antes, <i>before</i>	Temprano, <i>early</i>
Ahún, <i>yet, even</i>	à la tárde, <i>in the evening</i>
Amenudo, <i>often</i>	A deshora, <i>unseasonably, &c.</i>
Luégo, <i>forthwith</i>	

Adverbs of Place.

Aquí, <i>here</i>	Delante, <i>before</i>
Allí, <i>there</i>	Atrás, <i>behind</i>
Adónde, <i>where</i>	Aparte, <i>apart, or aside</i>
De dónde, <i>from whence</i>	Arriba, <i>above</i>
Acá, <i>hither</i>	Abáxo, <i>below</i>
Acullá, <i>yonder</i>	Cerca, <i>near</i>
Ahi, <i>in that place</i>	Cábe, <i>close by</i>

De aquí, <i>from hence</i>	Junto, <i>adjoining</i>
De allí, <i>from thence.</i>	Léxos, <i>far off</i>
Dentro, <i>within</i>	Encima, <i>upon</i>
Fuera, <i>without</i>	Debáxo, <i>underneath</i>

Adverbs of Affirmation.

Si, <i>yes</i>	Verdaderamente, <i>truly</i>
Cíerto, <i>truly</i>	También, <i>as well, also</i>
Ciertamente, <i>certainly</i>	Antes, <i>rather</i>
En verdád, <i>in truth</i>	

Of Denying.

No, <i>no, or not</i>	Ni, <i>neither</i>
Náda, <i>nothing</i>	Tampoco, <i>neither</i>

Of Number.

Una vez, <i>once</i>	Múchas véces, <i>often</i>
Dos véces, <i>twice</i>	Pócas véces, <i>seldom</i>
Tres véces, <i>three times</i>	Amenudo, <i>often</i>

Of Showing.

He aquí,	Bebold bere
----------	-------------

Of Encouraging.

Ea, ea pués	Go to iben
-------------	------------

Of Increasing.

~	Mas,	More
---	------	------

Adverbs of Diminishing.

Ménos, <i>less</i>	Pássio, <i>soft and fair</i>
Póco, <i>little</i>	

Of

Of Wishing.

Oxalá, *would to God* O si, *O if it would be*

Of Asking:

Porqué, <i>why</i>	De dónde, <i>from whence</i>
Que, <i>what</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Dónde, <i>where</i>	Cómo, <i>how</i>
Adónde, <i>whither</i>	

Of Doubting.

Quiza, *perhaps* Porventúra, *peradventure*

Of Order.

Primeramente, <i>firstly</i>	Aquénde, <i>on this side</i>
Después, <i>after</i>	Finalmente, <i>in fine</i>
Allénde, <i>beyond</i>	'A lo último } <i>lastly, &c.</i>
Alfin, <i>at the end</i>	'A la Póstre } <i>lastly, &c.</i>
Alcábo, <i>at the end</i>	

Of Likeness.

Cómo, <i>as</i>	Assi, <i>so</i>
Casi, <i>almost</i>	Tan, tanto, <i>so much, &c.</i>

Of Chance.

A cífo, *accidentally.* Por dicha, *per chance*

Of Comparison.

Mas, <i>more</i>	Mejór, <i>better</i>
Ménos, <i>less</i>	Peór, <i>worse</i>

Of gathering together.

Junto, or Juntamente	<i>Together</i>
'A montones	<i>In heaps</i>

Of Severing.

Aparte	<i>Afunder</i>
--------	----------------

The Adverb *Harto*, Enough, varies as to the Gender before Substantives ; for the Spaniards say, *Harto Pan*, Bread enough, where it is Masculine ; and *Harta Agua*, Water enough, where it is Feminine : But before Adjectives it always retains the Masculine Termination ; as *Harto bueno*, and *Harto buena*, though *bueno* and *buenas* are Masculine and Feminine. There are some other Adverbs of the same Sort ; but it would be too tedious to mention all Things.

Note, That the Adjectives are often taken as Adverbs, and then they retain the Masculine Termination ; as *Hágase esto primero*, let this be done first ; *póngala esto derécto*, put this right, or to rights.

C H A P. VI.

Of CONJUNCTIONS.

COnjunctions are a Part of Speech that joins Words and puts Sentences together. Some Conjunctions are Copulative, as uniting Words, and connecting the Sense ; others are Disjunctive, dividing the Sense, and only joining the Expressions ;

sions; others are conditional, shewing the Causes of Things; others Rational or Conclusive, which some call Collective or Illative; and others Adversatives, by which is demonstrated that which we say cannot hurt or obstruct. Besides these, the *Latin* hath others which they call Ordinatives, as also Expletives; but these last only serve for Ornament, for they no way add to, or take from the Discourse.

Conjunctions Copulative are *y* and *e*, signifying *and*; viz. *y* before all Words, excepting those that begin with *i* Vowel, instead of which is put *e*, as we have said in the Observation on the Vowels; *Cómo*, as; *También*, also.

Conjunctions Disjunctive are, *Ni*, neither; *O*, or *u*, or, either; *yá*, either, as *yá ésto*, *yá aquéllo*, either this or that.

Causative, as *Porqué*, why, wherefore.

Conditional, *Si*, if; *dádo que*, granting that.

Exceptive, as *Sinó*, if not; *mas*, but; *otramén*, otherwise.

There are others of other Sorts, as *Aloméno*, at least; *Aunque*, although; *Toda vía*, notwithstanding, nevertheless.

CHAP. VII.

Of PREPOSITIONS.

PREPOSITIONS are a Part of Speech most commonly set before other parts, either in Apposition; as *ante la justicia*, before a Justice; or else in Composition; as *disponér*, to dispose, *injústo*, unjust.

Those us'd in Composition are *a*, *ad*, *al*, Arabic, *am*, *co*, *com*, *con*, *de*, *des*, *di*, *dis*, *en*, *ex*, *in*, *ob*, *pre*, *pro*, *re*, *se*, *so*, *su*, &c.

In a, as *Acanalár*, to cut in Gutters or Channels ; *abatanár*, to full or mill Cloth.

ad, as *Advenedízo*, a stranger ; *advertír*, to advertise.

al, *Alcázar*, a Royal Castle or Palace ; *Alquitára*, a Limbeck.

am, *Ampáro*, Protection ; *amparádo*, protected.

co, *coberedéro*, coheir ; *co-ordinár*, to co-ordain, or ordain together.

com, *comparár*, to compare ; *comprometér*, to compromise.

con, *convenir*, to agree ; *condescendér*, to condescend.

de, *degenerár*, to degenerate ; *deponér*, to depose.

des, *deshacér*, to undo ; *desfigurádo*, disfigured.

di, *diferír*, to defer ; *difundír*, to diffuse, to spread abroad.

dis, *disculpár*, to excuse ; *disponér*, to dispose.

en, *entorpecér*, to grow dull or stupid ; *envergonzár*, to make ashamed.

ex, *exponér*, to expound, interpret ; *expandér*, to spread.

in, *Indignación*, Indignation ; *inferír*, to infer.

ob, *obtenér*, to obtain ; *obtenido*, obtained.

pre, *preponér*, to set before ; *prevenir*, to prevent.

pro, *proponér*, to propose ; *proseguír*, to prosecute.

re, *reedificár*, to rebuild ; *reponér*, to put again.

se, *separár*, to separate ; *separádo*, separated.

so, *socorrér*, to succour ; *solicitár*, to solicit.

Su, *suponér*, to suppose ; *suportár*, to support, &c.

These Prepositions following serve to the Genitive Case.

Antes, as *Antes del dia*, before Day-break.

Delante, before, as *Delante del Juez*, before the Judge.

De,

De, of; as *la Muger de Pédro*, Peter's Wife, that is, the Wife of Peter.

Dentro, within; as *Dentro de mi casa*, within my House.

Detrás, behind; as *detrás del Cárro*, behind the Coach.

Despues, after; as *despues de esto*, after this.

Báxu, } under; as *llevába un Coléto báxu de su cápa*,
Debáxo } he had on a Buff-Coat, under his

Cloak. *Debáxo de mi Manto*, al
Réy muerto, under my Cloak I'll kill
the King.

Abáxo, down, below, is an Adverb.

Encima, upon; as *encima del Agua*, upon the Water.

Derredór, round about, as *al derredór de Castillo*,
round about the Castle.

Cércas, near; as *Pedro está cércas de Juan*, Peter is
near to John.

Acérca, Though formerly used as a Proposition instead of *Cércas*, it is now used only as an Adverb, and signifies concerning, near, and governs a Genitive; as *acérca de esto que dice*? what say you concerning this? *los días acérca del Nacimiento de Christo son muy fríos*, the Days about or near Christmas are very cold.

Fuéra, out; as *Vaya fuéra de mi Casa*, go out of my House.

Fuéra, *afuéra*, without, are Adverbs.

Entórno } about; as *entorno de mi*, about me, round
Contórno } about me.

Enfrénte, over-against; as *Enfrente de san Pablo*,
over-against St Pauls, &c.

The following serve for the Dative Case.

á } to, *as*, *à* *Dios sólo se ba de dar la Adoración*,
píra } for } to God alone we must pay Worship: *di*

esto à Pédro, I gave this to Peter ; ésto es para mi, this is for me.

And though there are some Authors, who place here the Prepositions *bácia*, towards, and *basta*, even to ; I am of Opinion that they belong to the Accusative, because they are equivalent to the *Latin erga, versus, versum* ; *usque, ad, &c.* and I see no Reason to the contrary.

Prepositions governing the Accusative.

à, as ámo à Dios, I love God ; voy à Róma, I go to Rome. Míre à tal parte, look on such side, toward such a place, and stands por bácia, towards ; à modo de Conversación, by way of Conversation, instead of por, by.

Ante, before ; as bói el doce de Júnio pareció ante mi, this Day the twelfeth of June appeared or came before me.

Entre, among, between ; as bablándo entre nosotros, le diré la diferencia, que bái entre las Córtes de Londres y Madrid, speaking between us, (among us) I will tell you the Difference that there is between the Courts of London and Madrid.

Según, according ; as según loque se me dixo, créo, que todo es un embuste, according to what is told me, I believe, that every thing is a fly Lie, Deceit, Falsehood, or Imposition.

Sobre, upon, as todo lo que tengo, lo puédo llevar sobre este Caballo, every thing I have, I can carry it upon this Horse.

Hasta, until, even to ; as Passcaré hasta las ocho de la Nocbe, I will walk until nine a Clock in the Night ; hasta Mañána, till to morrow, iré hasta Roma, I will go as far as Rome, even to Rome.

Hacia, towards ; voyme bácia el Río, I go towards the River.

Por,

Por, for, by, through ; *Consuélame por amór de Díos*, Comfort me for God's sake ; *Las diez tocaren quando passába por esta calle*, it struck ten a Clock when I went through this Street. *Le assegúro ésto por mi palábra, por mi vida, por mi Fe*, I assure you this by my Word, by my Life, by my Faith. *Por* is sometimes taken for *para*, but of this we will take notice afterwards.

Cábe, near, as *Le ballé cábe la Ciudad* (*Cábe*, an old Word) I found him near the City.

En, in ; as *espéro y creo en Díos*, I hope, and believe in God.

Cóntra, against, as *lo que babbas es cóntra los Atributos de Díos*, what you do speak is against the Attributes of God, &c.

Prepositions governing the Ablative.

à, as *creo que le Castigarán à pena de Privacion de Oficio*, I believe that they will punish him, with the Privation, or depriving him of his Office or Employment. *Lo bizo à colór de engañárnos*, he has done it with an Intention to deceive under the Colour, &c. à is taken here as *con*.

Con, with ; *ven con mígo*, come with me.

De, as *Díos formo à Eva de la Costilla, que es buéssu tuerto*, God formed Eve from the Rib, which is a crooked Bone. *Víne de Róma*, I came from Rome.

Sin, without. *Lo bice sin ayúda*, I have done it without help.

En, in ; *no téngo dinéro en el Bolsillo*, I have no Money in the Purse.

Por, for, *Lo bice por ti*, I have done it for you, &c.

C H A P. VIII.

Of INTERJECTIONS.

INterjections are Parricles thrown into Discourse, which denote, or show the Passions of the Mind. Of Mirth, or Rejoycing. *A la gála, a la gála.* Which is O fine, O rare, &c.

Wondering, *Valgame Diós*, God help me, which is also usual in a Fright, and upon other Occasions.

Grieving, *Guay, Alas!* or *Ay de mi!* Alas for me.

Wishing, *Oxalá*, Would to God, &c.

Ha, ah! bé, as bé que dices, he! what you say!

O, as O Dios! O Dolor! O God! O pain, or grief!

A, as à Fuláno, ho, there such a one, &c.

REMARKS upon some Spanish Words and Phrases.

ALL Languages have some peculiar Expressions to themselves, which are not the same in other Tongues, and the *Spanish* is not without some of that Sort. Having therefore already run through all, that belongs to the usual Parts of Discourse, and their Nature; it will not be improper to add something concerning these Words and Phrases in the *Spanish Tongue*, which are not to be found in others.

In the first place, the Preposition *Des* is inseparable from some other Word, and never to be used but

but in Composition, as signifying nothing by itself: but being join'd to another Word, denotes a Privation of what the other imports, as the Syllable *Dis* does in some *English* Words; thus *Hónra*, is Honour, *Deshónra*, Dishonour, or Disgrace: *Dí-
cra*, good Fortune, *Desdícra*, Misfortune. The same Effect it has when join'd with Verbs; as *Hacér*, to make, *Deshacér*, to undo; *Armár*, to arm, *Desarmár*, to disarm.

En is commonly in, as *en casa*, in the House; *en la calle*, in the Street, &c. but in some Cases it has a peculiar Signification, not to be express'd in any other Language, that I know of; as for instance, *Estár en cuérpo*, literally in *English* is, to be in Body, which is nonsense; but the true Meaning of it, is, to be without a Coat or Cloak for a Man, or for a Woman without a Scarf or a Veil, so that the Body is more expos'd to View, without an upper Garment. *Está en piérnas*, literally he is in Legs, which has no Meaning, but it signifies, he is bare legg'd, that is, his Legs are expos'd without Stockings. *Estóis en cárnes*, literally I am in Flesh, but the true Meaning is, I am stark naked, I have nothing to cover my Flesh. *En cuéros*, signifies the same as *En cárnes*, that is stark naked, the Difference being that *en cárnes*, is in naked Flesh, and *en cuéros*, is in naked Skin; much like the *English* Expression, that a Man is in Buff, when he is stark naked.

En shews, or it notes the last end of a Thing; as *creo en Díos*, I believe in God. When it's found before the Infinitive, then it turns the Infinitive into an *English* Gerund, as *consiste en bablár bién*, it consists or depends in speaking well. When before a Gerund, it is the same as *after* and *at* in *English*; as *en cenándo*, after Supper, or when at Supper; *en confessando la Verdád*, after your confessing the Truth, or when you confess the Truth; it signifies *as soon*, as *en acabándo lo diré*, as soon as I have done I will tell it

218 *The RUDIMENT'S of*
it to you. *En despertando, me levantaré*, as soon as I wake, I will get up; and then it stands for *luégo*, or *tan presto que*, *cómo*, or *cuando*; as *en despertando*, viz. *Quando despertare*, when I shall, or should wake.

Hidepúta in its Genuine and usual Acceptation, is the Contraction of *Hijo de púta*, Son of a Whore, a most scandalous Word in all Languages, and as such, scarce ever us'd by Spaniards of any Politeness, in its vulgar and true Meaning: Yet as bad as it is in itself, it is become a Sort of Exclamation, mostly us'd by vulgar People, and that in Contempt, and by way of Scorn, as *O bidepúta y que gran personage que es!* O the Son of a Whore, or the Scoundrel, what a great Person he is! to denote a mean Person, a vile Wretch, carrying himself loftily. Yet some, through Ignorance, not reflecting on the Baseness of the Expression, will let it fly without thinking even to commend any thing that surprises them, as *O bidepúta y que bien que lo ba bécbo!* where that scandalous word drops without thinking, and the whole imports no more, than, O how bravely he has done it! even as among us, we too often hear a Rake say to his Friend, Damn you Tom, I'm glad to see you! thus cursing him out of meer Affection.

Hidágo, is a Gentleman, a Man of good Birth, being a Contraction of *Hijo dalgo*, or rather *Hijo de algo*, the Son of something, that is, of a Person of note, or one remarkable for something; not for much Money, which in Spain, does not make a Gentleman, but for something that is honourable; as Virtue, Learning, Wisdom, or Valour.

Vuestra mercéd, (as it is said before) is generally contracted into *Usted* in speaking, and in writing express'd by these two Letters *V. M.* This is a courteous expression to be found in no other Language, being always us'd where there is any Civility, the Spaniards never saying you to one another, which would

would be very unmanly; for *Tu*, you, is only us'd from a Master to a Servant, or from a Superior to some very mean Person. Where the least respect is shown, and this practised even to very indifferent Persons; they say *Vos*, ye; and even this is not allow'd of, unless the Person so expressing himself, be much superior to the other. The common word therefore in Discourse between People of any Fashion, or good Manners is *usted*, for *Vuestra merced*, which has nothing to answer it in *English*, but is in the Nature of your Worship; for in speaking to a Nobleman, they use *Vuestra Señoría*, sometimes contracted into *Usía*, your Lordship: *Vuestra Excellenciá*, your Excellency, &c. but they have not the Title of your Grace, as in *English*. There is another respectful Way of speaking, which is calling a Man by his Name, though speaking to him, *Sea servido de sentárse el Señor Don Juan*, May it please *Don John* to sit down, &c. Where we may also observe, that the word *Don* is also peculiar to the *Spanish*, formerly a Title more sparingly us'd, and given only to Knights, and Persons of Distinction; but now grown common to all that can claim any thing of Gentility, but yet not to Tradesmen, and inferior Persons. *Señor*, is like the *Latin Dominus*, either Sir, or Lord, and therefore equivocal; for they say, *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the King; and *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the least Gentleman; just as we do, Sir, to the King, and to any other. Yet is *Señor*, a Lord, as has been said; the which Difference is found by the manner of speaking; for though in speaking they say, *Señor Don Juan*, *Señor Don Pedro*, yet a Letter must not be superscrib'd, *Al Señor Don Pedro*, unless he be a Lord; because then it implies Dignity, and in common speaking it does not. So in speaking to say, *es un Señor*, or *es un gran Señor*, implies that he is a Lord, or a great Lord. However within a Letter, as we begin Sir, so they begin, *Mui Señor mio*, without thereby meaning to give the title of Lord, but as if

if we should say, my good Master, or good Sir. Much more may be said to this purpose, but this Place will not allow of it; these few Instructions are convenient for Learners, that they may not only speak true *Spanish*, but with good manners, and politely.

Fuláno, zutáno or citáno, with their Diminutives *Fulaníco, or Fulanillo, zutaníco or citaníco*, and *citanillo*, are Words us'd to signify a third Person nameless, as we say, such a one, and all of them import the same: the two first being us'd to express two distinct Persons, not named, as such a one, and such a one; the first of them always us'd if only one Person be spoke of, and the second never but when there is occasion to mention two. They are often us'd in the Feminine Gender, as *Fulána, citána*.

Abáxo, in it's own Sense signifies below, and Debáxo, under; but as apply'd, the first may have the same meaning with the latter; as De Diós abáxo gó lo bize bómbre, under God I made him a Man. Del Rey abáxo no ay mayór Personaje, next the King there is no greater Person.

A vueltas, though it seems to come from vuélvo, I turn, or return, signifies among; as A vueltas de otras cósas le dió una cadéna: among other things he gave him a chain.

Cábo, properly signifies the end; but it extends to other meanings, as Estoi al cábo, in one sense is, I am reduc'd to extremity, either with Sickness, or Poverty; and the same Words import, I fully understand, or I am entirely apprized of the thing. Again, Mugér bermósa por el cábo, is a Woman perfectly beautiful; and Tomár la cósa muí por el cábo, is to take a thing in the hardest sense.

Recáudo, or Recádo, for it is written both ways, though most commonly pronounced the latter, is a word of various Significations. El dinéro está à buen recádo, The Money is safely plac'd, it is in good

good Hands, or safe. *Recádo pára escribir*, the necessaries for writing. *Dile un recádo*, I deliver'd him a Message. *Buén recádo trábigo*, I come well provided. *Recádo*, is also us'd for a Subpœna, and several other ways.

Aldabáda, is properly, a Knock at a Door ; but *dar aldabádas*, is sometimes meant of much babling, or talking to no purpose.

A pies juntillas, is a very odd Expression, without any real Signification of it self, and yet there is a way of using it thus, *Créo a pies juntillas*, I positively believe, I am stedfast in the Belief, without asking any further Questions.

Tomár las de villa Diego, is to run away.

Hablár de cbacóta, to banter, or talk idly, a word seldom us'd, but by way of Contempt of the Person it is applied to.

Dar xabón a la Rópa, to soap Linnen for washing ; but *Dar un xabón a una persona*, is what we call to rattle one, to give a severe Reprimand.

A Few Comparisons.

Mas blanco que la Nieve, whiter than Snow.

Mas negro que la Pez, blacker than Pitch.

Mas amargo que la Hiél, more bitter than Gaul,

Mas dulce que la Miél, sweeter than Honey.

Mas brávo que un León, fiercer than a Lyon.

Mas mánso que una ovéja, tamer than a Sheep.

Comparisons to express doing Things impracticable.

Es como dar con el púño en el Ciélo. That is like striking at Heaven.

Es como becbár líenzas en la Mar. That is like darting at the Sea.

Es como predicár en Desiérto. It is like preaching in a Desert.

Es como coger agua en Cesto. It is like drawing Water in a Basket.

Es como querer volar sin alas. It is like attempting to fly without Wings.

Es como el perro del Hortelano, que ni come las berzas, ni las deixa comér a los otros. He is like the Gardiner's Dog, that neither eat's Cabbage, nor lets others eat it. We say, like a Dog in a Manger, that will neither eat Hay, nor let the Horse eat it.

Observe, That most of the Adverbs Adjectives are turned likewise in Spanish by the Preposition *con*, and the Substantive, as *prudentemente*, prudently, is the very same as *con prudencia*, with prudence.

Atrevidamente, boldly, *con atrevimiento*, with boldness.

Elegantemente, elegantly.

Con elegancia, with elegance.

Dicibosamente, happily.

Con diciba, with happiness.

Liberalmente, liberally, *con liberalidad*, with liberality, &c.

There are Degrees of Comparison among the Adverbs, as *Doctamente*, *mas doctamente*, *dotisínamente*, wisely.

áy, bái, abi.

There are several who make no Difference between *ay* the Interjection, *áy* the Verb, and *áy* the Adverb; but there is a vast one, in their being spelt and pronounced right. The Interjection *áy*, alass, is rightly spelt, and the Accent is to be on the *á*, and 'tis to be pronounced long; the Verb is written thus *bái*, there is but one Syllable, and to be pronounced as such: the Adverb thus *abi* there; and a strong Accent is to be put on the *i*, as *áy de mi!* *que bái muchos Albeos* or *Albeistas abi en Londres*, *y temo el ir*, alass for me! that there are many Atheists there

there (or in that place *London*) in *London*, and I am afraid to go.

aquí, acá, &c.

Aquí here, in the Place where one stands ; *acá*, hither ; *paraquí, por acá*, here-abouts ; *abi*, there, a little farther ; *allá*, thither, to that place ; *acullá*, yonder, there, in that place ; *porabí porallí*, there-abouts ; *por abi porallá*, on that side, that way ; and they are join'd to the Prepositions *de*, from, *por*, by ; as *de aquí, de acá*, from, hence ; *de allá, de aculla*, from, thence ; *por aquí*, by here, by this place ; *por acá*, by these Parts, in these Parts ; *por allá*, by those Parts ; *por aculla*, by those other remote Parts or Places.

ánte, ántes.

Ante, before, is a Preposition, as *no conviene bablár assí ánte la preséncia del Rey*, it is not fit or convenient to speak so, or thus, before the King's Presence : *ánte* is an Adverb, and is used as *ántes*, as in the Law of *la Partida 2, Tit. 4. L. 1.* but at present never used so : It signifies sometimes that which is first in time, or of a greater importance, as *ánte tódas las cósas*, before all things : *ánte* signifies likewise a Buffoloe's Hide, and the Fruit Plates that are served up at Dinner or Supper before the Meat : *ántes* has likewise this last Signification.

Antes, as an Adverb, signifies the preceeding Time or Place ; as *lo dixe ántes*, I said it before ; *conservó los Críados en los cargas de ántes*, he kept the Servants in the same Places they had before ; it is likewise a Preposition Adversative, and signifies rather, as *antes quíero morír que pecár*, I rather love to die, then to sin : It requires likewise a Genitive, as *ántes de la Muerte del Rey apareció un Cométa*, a Comet

224 *The RUDIMENTS of
a Comet did appear before the Death of the King,
or the King's Death.*

Antes is taken as *antecedente*, preceeding, or before, as *el exército del año ántes nos taló los Campus*, the Army of the preceeding Year spoiled, ravaged, or wasted the Fields.

Antes con antes, adverbial. immediately, and more than immediately, if possible; a sudden diligence, *ex improviso*, suddenly, unexpected; as it will be seen in the several Phrases that often happen in Writings.

Antes del dia, before Day break; *antesque*, a Preposition conjunctive, as *antesque vayas a trabajar, vete*; *à Rezár*, before you go to Work, go to or do your Prayers.

Ante and *antes* are likewise Prepositions, and help in the Composition of some Words, but never change *e* or *es* into *i* as an Author observes wrongfully, because we don't say, *Anticámara*, but *Antecámara*, Anti-chamber, *Antesála*, a Room before the Saloon, or the State Room.

Delante, adelante.

Delante, before, in presence, fronting, is a Preposition governing the Genitive, as *vivo delante de la Lonja*, I live fronting the Change: *este Crimen se comitió delante del Gobernador*, this Crime was committed before the Governor: *Quítese de delante de mi*, go away, or from thy presence. It is likewise an Adverb, as *el General va delante*, the General goes at the Head, or before, &c.

Adelante, an Adverb, signifies fronting, forwards, before, as *vámos adelante*, let us go on, or forwards. It signifies Time, when it has before it *en*, *pára*, *dé aqui*, *de allí*, &c. as *en adelante*, afterwards, in time to come; *para en adelante*, for the time to come; *de aqui adelante*, from hence forward; *mas adelante*, farther

farther yet; *de hoy en adelante*, from this time forward, &c.

'Aina, áinas.

'Aina, Adverb, soon, sooner, as *más áina lo haré* *yo que tu*, I will do it sooner than you; *tu aprendiste la lección en una hora*, *pero yo la aprenderé más áina*, you did learn your Lesson in an Hour, but I will learn it sooner. So that *áina* always has *mas* before it.

'Ainas, Adverb, almost, near *atend*; as *áinas me mató*, he almost kill'd me; *estoy áinas de la Muerte*, I am near my Death. These words are but seldom used in Spanish.

Balde, de Balde, en balde.

Balde is a Word used generally in *Andalusia*, and signifies a Bucket to draw Water from a Well, &c. but in Spanish has no Signification, but when in Composition, and then is an Adverb; as *debálde*, gratis, free cost, for nothing, without occasion; as *le he servido debálde*, I have served him for nothing; *comímos de balde*, we eat free cost; *le castigó de balde*, punished him without occasion. *Enbalde* (not *embalde*, as some do write it carelessly) in vain, without effect; as, *después de todo, nuestro trabajo será enbalde*, after all, our Labour will be in vain; *Prediqué enbalde*, I preached without effect, in vain.

Note, This frequent Expression of some Shopkeepers to the Buyers; *se lo venderé de balde*, I will sell it to you for nothing, that is, almost for nothing, so cheap that the like will be found nowhere for Cheapness.

Atruéque.

Is an Adverb, *vamos atruéque*, let us change; but when it signifies *instead*, or *in the room of*, then it is a Preposition, and requires the Genitive; as, *atruéque de su anillo*, or *sortija*, *le daré la miá*, I will give you my Ring instead, or in the room of yours.

Of Pára and Por.

These Prepositions are often confounded by the Gentlemen that learn the Spanish, nay even by some Spanish Authors, so that I think it necessary to observe that,

Pára, for; serves to denote the Utility, or Detriment to a Person; as *estos cién reales son pára Pedro, que es pôbre*, these hundred Reals are for Peter, who is poor, or because he is poor. *Los di pára vmd.* I gave them for you; *víne aquí pára bablár con vmd.* I came here to speak with you.

When the English puts *to* before the Infinitive, the Spaniards make use of *de*, *à*, *para*, or *por*; but with this Distinction, that *de* is put before the Infinitive, and when the Verbs *venir*, *bavér*, *tenér*, &c. or a Noun is before the Infinitive; as *Vengo de cenar*, I come from Supper; *be de de amár*, I must love; *tengo de ir*, I must go; *tengo neceſſidad de ser consoládo*, I want to be comforted, &c. when a Verb of Motion preceeds the Infinitive, as *la Léy de Díos me compelle à bacér bién*, Divine Law compels me to do good; *vôi à leer este libro*, I go to read this Book. *Pára*, when the Verb tends to an Habit, Use, Custom, or its Quality, as *ò señór! dadme vuestra Grácia, y bacédmel bábil para amaros, constante pára sufrir, y firme pára perse-*

verár, O Lord ! give me thy Grace, and make me able to love you, constant to suffer, and firm or stable to continue or persevere. *Por*, and *pára*, when they denote the End that moves or inclines, the Cause and the Means to obtain it ; as *servo à Díos por gozár de el prémio*, I serve God to enjoy the Reward, or that I may, or in order to enjoy the Reward. *El espíritu málo nos pone amenudo malos pensamiéntos para desviarnos del camino de la virtud*, the evil Spirit puts on us often bad Thoughts to set us out of the way of Virtue.

Para is used in questioning and answering, and signifies, for what ? why ? for whom ? to what purpose, &c. as *Para que se díxo esto* ? to what purpose ? to what end, for what is this said ? *No bái paraque*, there is no Reason, no Occasion, no Cause : *Para quien es ésta carta* ? *para mi*, for whom is this Letter ? for me. *Paraque* signifies likewise *that*, and is a Sign that denotes the subjunctive Mood ; as, *paraque yo áme*, that I may love : It expresses also, to what End, Office, or Place, a Thing, or a Person is good for ; as *éste Caballero es buéno para Ministro*, *aqué'l para Secretário*, *y el otro para Mayor domo*, this Gentleman is good for a Minister, viz. to be a Minister, that for a Secretary, and the other for a Steward. *Este epejo es bueno para este quárto*, *y aquéllas cortinas para mi cámara*, this Looking-Glass is good for this Room, and those Curtains for my Bed.

It denotes present and future Time ; as, *este vestido es buéno para bói*, *pára Mañána*, *y para cada dia*, this Suit of Cloth is good for this Day, for To-morrow, and for every Day : *he comprádo trigo para un áño*, I have bought Corn for a Year : *Abóra y para siempre, alabémos a Díos*, let us praise God now and for ever. Exceptions, *Para el áño passádo se compráron estas provisiónes*, *y díran bau'n*, these Provisions

visions were bought for last Year, that is, for the service of last Year, and last as yet: *Para ayér (el día de ayér) se biciéron estos Versos*, these Verses were made for Yesterday, that is, to celebrate that Day.

Pára poco, good for little, of small capacity.

Paracon, between us, or in my, or our Opinion; as, *para conmigo es cierto*, in my opinion it is true.

Por sometimes denotes that the Thing is not yet done; as, *esta obra está por acabár*, this Work is not yet finished: *por bacerse*, to be done.

It signifies likewise the End of, or Means to do a Thing; as, *se riñeron por mí*, they quarrelled on my account, &c.

Por, by, for, through; as *Por estos medios lo alcancó*, he obtain'd it by these Means; *fui al Banco por ducientas libras*, I went to the Bank for 200 l. *passemos por ésta calle*, let us go through this Street.

Por, though, although, &c. *por pequeña que sea la somaré*, tho' so small I will take it, altho' it be small I will take it, and then it denotes a Tense in the Optative, as *por doyo que sea*, though he be a learned Man, &c.

In Composition, as *por tal*, so that; *por un tal*, for such a one; *porloque*, *porloqual*, for which; *Pordonde*, which way; *porende*, therefore; *por ésto*, for that Reason; *porque*, why; *por ventura*, peradventure, perhaps. But *pro* for *provécho*, as *buen pro le bága*, much good may it do you: *pro*, *el pro*, the reason of a Thing, as *el pró de las Mugéres*, Women's Reason; *pro y contra*, pro and con, for and against; *por acaso*, by chance, by accident; *por dinéro báila el Pérro*, the Dog dances for Money; or as we say in English, Money makes the Mare to go.

Primero, Primo, &c.

Are Adjective Ordinals, but with Distinction; because we use *Primo*, and not *Primero* in the great Numbers, as an Author wrongfully saith; we don't say *vigésimo primero*, but *vigésimo Primo*, 21st; *trigésimo primo*, 31st. *Primero* stands sometimes for *primeramente*; and when it has *lo* before it, it is taken as Substantive; it is often us'd before and after the Substantives, when before them looses *o*, as *primer lugár*, *lugar primero*; when an Adverb it signifies first, before, in the first place, rather; as *primero iré a la Guerra*, *que à la Escuela*, I rather chuse to serve in the War, then to go to School, &c. *Primo*, the first, the best, chiefest, a delicate curious Thing: *Primo* rarely is join'd to any Substantive, because it stands as a Substantive itself, and varies its Termination, and then signifies a Cousin, as *Primo Hermáno*, a Cousin German; *Prima Hermána*, a she Cousin German: *óbra Prima*, curious Work, the best; *lo Primo*, the very best, &c.

N O.

Altho' *no*, be a Negative, in questioning it is a Note of Interrogation; as *me estaré aquí no?* shall I not wait here? *No me bará este favor?* Will you not do me this favour? and then it stands for whether or no.

Tanto, Quanto, tan, Quan.

The Adverbs *Tanto*, so much, as much; *Quanto*, how much, are often put before Substantives, Verbs, &c. to signify the Quantity, Manner, or Circumstances of the Action, &c. as, *por tanto*

230 *The RUDIMENTS of
comer estás enfermo*, you are sick for having eat so
much, for over eating ; *Quanto bêbo me bace mal*,
every thing I drink, (all that I drink) does me
no good. *Quánto píde por estos güantes?* tanto,
how much do you ask for these Gloves? so much.
Tanto quanto, every thing, so much as ; *tanto mas*,
so much more. *Tanto* signifies likewise a Counter
to play : *Quánto*, all, every thing, as *quanto dice es
falso*, all, what, or every thing he saith is false ;
quanto mas? how much more ? *quantos?* how
many ? *quanto quiera*, how much soever.

Tán, so, as ; as *aquel Páño es tan bueno como
este*, that Cloth is as good as this ; *tiéne tan buenos
amigos*, he hath as good Friends : *quán*, how ; as
*ð quan málo eres, y quan bueno te báces entre los
Nobles*, O how bad you are, and how good do you
make yourself among the Nobility.

Tanbien, so well, as well ; *estó tan bien convale-
cido*, I am so well recovered : *esto está tan bien bêcho
como se puéda bacér*, this is as well done as it could be
done ; so that *Tanbien* must not be confounded with
Tambien, as an Author does, because *también* signi-
fies *also*, and not *as well*.

Además.

The Adverb *Además*, signifies, besides, moreover,
over and above, in vain ; as *Además, conviene saber que*,
besides, moreover, it is to be known that ; *pensativo
además quedó Don Quixote, esperando, &c.* over and
above thoughtful remain'd Don Quixote, waiting,
&c. Vol. II. Chap. III. *Además se cansa*, takes
pains in vain. *Pordemás*, that is, in vain, to no
purpose ; it governs likewise Genitive, as *ademas de
eso*, besides this, &c.

Según, when before a Verb is an Adverb, and sig-
nifies according, as ; as *Según dice Don Juán*, as Sir
John

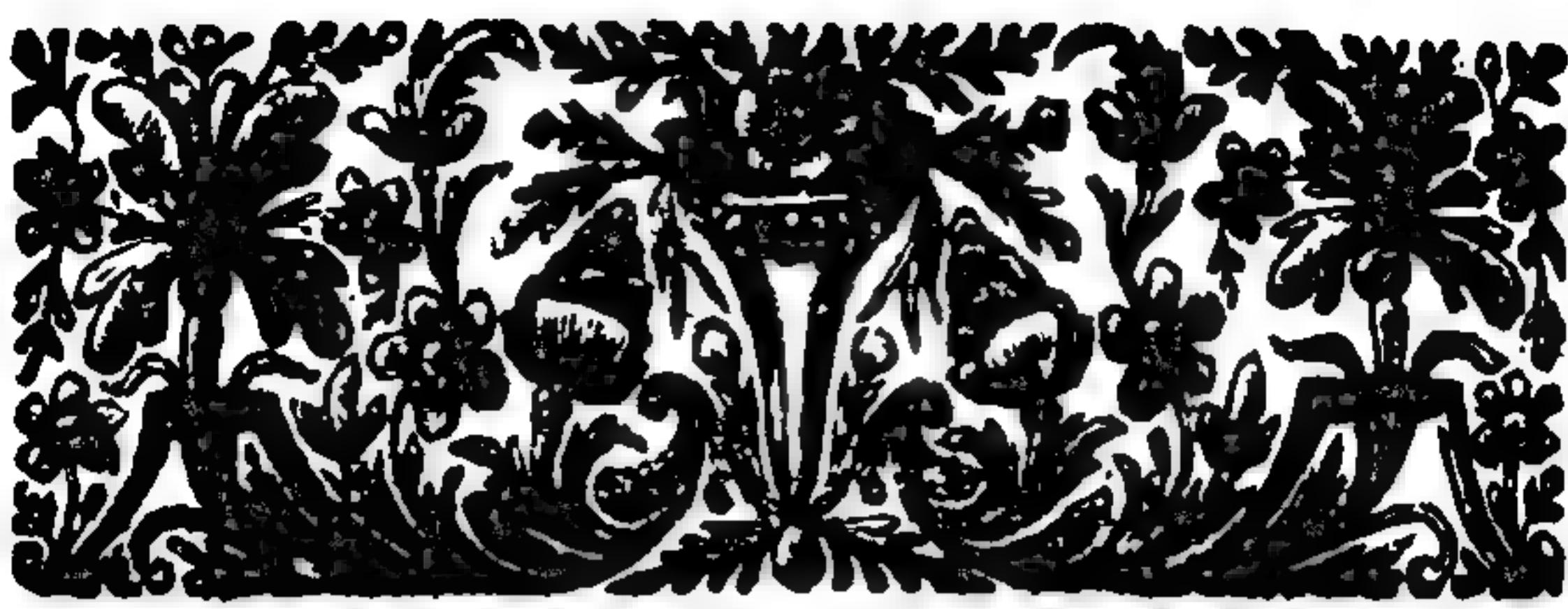
John saith ; it is likewise a Preposition governing the Accusative ; as, *según mi parecer*, according to my Opinion.

Ayúso, an old Adverb, is the same as *abáxo*, below, under ; as *lo ecbáron ayúso*, they throw'd it down, below, under ; it signifies likewise *after* and *under*, as *abáxo* ; as *de Díos en Ayúso*, or *de Díos abáxo yo le curé*, under God, or after God, I am the Person who cured him, or made him well.

Hasta, till, even, up to, as far as ; as, *basta quando?* till when ? *basta que venga*, untill I come ; *basta quanto?* how much ? *basta tanto*, so much ; *basta el borde*, up to the brink ; *basta Palacio*, as far as the Palace ; *basta las doce*, till Noon.

This may serve by way of Specimen, and Practice will teach what can't be so well committed to writing, without far exceeding the Bounds of a Grammar.





T H E
S E C O N D P A R T
O F T H E
SPANISH GRAMMAR,
Called S Y N T A X.



THE *Spanish* has so great an Affinity with the *Latin*, that whosoever understands the latter, will find little difficulty in the Construction of the other.

Having hitherto treated of the eight Parts of Speech, as they belong to Etymology, it remains now to treat of them as belonging to the Syntax (called Construction, or the order of Construction.)

CHAP. I.

Of the Concords and Articles.

THERE are three Concords in the Spanish Speech, *viz.*

1. Between the nominative Case, and the Verb; as, *yo amo*, I love; *Pédro scribe*, Peter writes.

2. Between the Substantive and the Adjective; as, *hombre curioso*, a curious Man; *Mujer virtuosa*, a virtuous Woman.

3. Between the Antecedent and the Relative, as *Feliz es, quien vive contento*, happy is he who lives contented, or with content.

Of the first Concord.

A Verb personal agreeth with his Nominative Case in Number and Person; as *yo Leo*, *tu Apréndes*, *el Maestro enséña*, I read, thou learns, the Master teaches, &c. Note, That many Nominative Cases, with a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Verb Plural; as, *Pédro y Juan viniéron a verme ayér*, Peter and John came to see me Yesterday.

Sometimes a whole Clause, and the infinitive Mood of a Verb, may be the Nominative to the Verb following; as, *todo lo que se díxo ayér, me movió á tomar ésta resolución*, all that was said Yesterday moved me to take this Resolution: *el comer satisface al bambriento*, to eat, eating, satisfies the Hungry; *el levantarse temprano es saludable*, to rise betime in the Morning, is wholsome.

Exceptions.

Exceptions.

When a Question is asked, then the Nominative goes after the Verb; as, *está el Sr. Fuláno en casa?* is Mr. such a one at home? *como se entiende ésto?* how is this understood; *que tiene vmd?* What is the Matter with you? And so in the Negatives, as *no es ésto?* *no es verdad?* Is it not this? is it not true? These Relatives are excepted; *que bora es?* What is it a Clock? *quién es?* who is? *quién toca?* who knocks? *quién lláma?* who calls, &c.

Some of the Reciprocal Verbs, and the Imperatives of all the Verbs have their Nominative after them; as, *pésame mucho*, I am very sorry; *áma tu*, love thou.

When a Verb comes between two Nominatives of diverse Numbers, the Verb may indifferently accord with either of them; as, *tantas palabras juntas es confusión*, or *son confusión*, so many Words together are a Confusion: *las superfluidades son Exceso* Superfluities are an Excess.

Of the Second Concord.

The Adjective, whether it be a Noun, Pronoun, or Participle, agreeth with his Substantive in Case, Gender, and Number; as, *el bóm̄bre sábio*, *y la Mugér virtuósa son dignos de alabánza*, a learned Man, and a virtuous Woman are worthy of praise; by which you see how they agree, and that the Masculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine; and so it is said *dignos* and not *dignas*: It is likewise plain by the above Example, that, many Substantives with a Conjunction copulative between them will have an Adjective Plural.

When

When a Clause serves as a Substantive, then the Adjective is to be put in the Neuter Gender ; as, *el Rogár a Díos en todo tiempo es bueno* ; *pero en tiempo calamitoso es neccário*, it is always good to pray to God ; but in calamitous time it is necessary.

Exceptions.

Before the Nouns Substantives beginning with *a*, *Euboniac gratia*, for the sake of the good Sound, the Spaniards use the Masculine Article, as has been said before, as *el agua*, the Water ; *al alma*, the Soul ; which proceeds from the Spaniards not using the Apostrophe, as some other Nations do, &c.

After *Vuestra Merced* the Adjective does not agree in Gender with *v.m.d.* but with the Person to whom one speaks, as we observ'd before ; so that when we speak to a Man, we say, *bien venido sea v.m.d.* Sir you art welcome ; and in the Plural, *bien venidos sean v.mdes.* Gentlemen you are welcome ; when to a Woman, *vmd. es muy buena*, Madam you are very good, &c.

Note, That *Bueno*, *malo*, *úno*, *primero*, *tercero*, &c. when before a Substantive, they lose the Letter *o* ; and *ciénto* loses *to* : and tho' some Authors are of Opinion, that *tanto* and *quanto* lose *to* before the Substantives, I say, that it is false, and wrong ; because *tanto* and *quanto* always remain whole, and are derived of the Latin Adverbs *Tanto*, *quanto* ; as, *quanto Mayor éres*, *tanto mas te bumerás*, how much the greater you are, so much the more you should be humbled. But *tán* and *quán* are derived from the Latin *tam* and *quam*.

Grande, loses *de* before the Substantives that begin with a Consonant ; as, *gran Mugér*, a great Woman ; *Gran Cása*, a great House : but if the Substantive begins with *a* then it is often indifferently

differently used, and when begins with another Vowel always retains *de*.

Observe likewise, that the *Spaniards* do generally use the *Adjectives* after the *Substantives*, as it has been said: but the *Epithets* are used by the best *Spanish Authors* before the *Substantives*; as, *el Seráptico San Francisco*, the *Seraphick St Francis*; *el Melifluo St Bernardo*, the *Mellifluous St Bernard*; *el intrépido General*, the *intrepid General*; *el Pbilósopbo Aristoteles*, the *Philosopher Aristotle*: *SanEíssimo Pádre*, *Beatíssimo Pádre*, the *Holy Father*; *Excelentíssimo Señór*, most excellent Sir; *ilustríssimo Señór*, most illustrious Sir, &c. and so we say *es buen hombre*, he is a good Man; *este es un mal hombre*, this is a bad Man.

Of the third Concord.

The *Antecedent* is a Word, or Clause that goes before the *Relative*, and is rehearsed again by the *Relative*.

The *Relative* agreeth with his *Antecedent* in *Gender*, *Number* and *Person*; as, *es sabio*, *quien bábla poco y bién*, that Man is wise, that speaketh but little and to the purpose.

When a *Relative* is between two *Antecedents* of diverse *Genders*, then it agreeth with either; as, *el Rey se irá luégo a una casa de campo*, *la que está en Windsor*, the King will soon go to a Country House, which is at Windsor; *be recibido tres cartas*, *cuyo contenido me gusta mucho*, I have receiv'd three Letters, whose Contents please me much; *atacáron al Enemigo*, *cuya infantería tomó luégo la derrota*, they attack'd the Enemy, whose Foot soon gave way and fled.

Sometimes the *Relative* hath for his *Antecedent* the whole *Sentence* that goeth before it, and then it must be put in the *Neuter Gender*, and in the *Singular*

lar Number ; as, *alzáronse los soldados en el fuerte contra su Gobernador, lo que le obligó a entregarle*, the Soldiers revolted in the Fort or Fortress against their Governor, which oblig'd him to deliver it up.

Many Antecedents Singular having a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Relative Plural, which shall agree with the Antecedent of the most worthy Gender ; as, *recibí el Caballo y la Mula que me envió, losque presenté al Sr. Fuláno*, I receiv'd the Horse and the Mule that you sent me, which I presented to Mr such a one.

When there is no Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative stands for the Nominative ; as, *quien dice esto?* who saith this? but when there is a Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative shall be put in the Case governed by the Verb, or any other Word ; as, *la gracia que le pido*, the Favour which I beg of you ; *el Rey á quien obedezco*, the King to whom I obey ; *el Embaxadór, de cuya protección gozo, me escribe ésta carta*, the Ambassador whose Protection I enjoy, wrote this Letter to me.

Note, that the Relatives you may make use of, are *le, les, la, lo, las, los*; (to these four last you may add *que* ; as, *la que, lo que, las que, los que*) *quien, tal, qual, cuyo, que*; to which you may likewise add a Preposition ; as, *á lo que Digo*, to which I say ; *de lo que recibí gusto*, of which I received Pleasure ; *de quien es?* to whom it belongs? *pára quién?* para él; for whom? for him ; *cuyo es éste sombréro?* then you may answer, *mío, tuyo, or suyo, or del Sr. Fuláno, de aquél Caballero*, mine, thine, or yours, or of Mr such a one, of that Gentleman.

Observe likewise, that these Relatives are called elliptic Articles, because they express the Substantive which is not there ; as, *recibí la de v. m.*, *la* for *la carta*, I received yours ; *leí los libros de Quevedo, pero los del Padre Feijoo no*, I read Quevédos

do's Books, but not those of Father Feijoo ; and then they govern the Case of the Substantive ; as *recibí la de Pedro, pero no la de Juan*, I receiv'd that of Peter's, but not that of John, &c.

Of the Articles.

There are three Articles in Spanish, as is said before, viz. *el* for the Masculines, *la* for the Femines, and *lo* for the Neuters ; and it can't be taken amiss, if I show here the manner, how they are to be used.

First, All proper Names of Men, Women, Gods, Goddesses, Angels good or bad ; of Months, Cities, Towns, and Villages, &c. have no Article before them ; as, *Philip V. Rey de España Luis XV. Rey de Francia* ; *Jorge II. Rey de Inglaterra*, &c. Philip V. King of Spain, &c. *Carolina Reina de Inglaterra*, Calorine Queen of England : *Jupiter, Juno, Lucrécia, St Miguél, St Michael* ; *Enero, January* ; *Febrero, February*, &c.

Secondly, If we put an Adjective between proper Names, or express their Epithets, or specify some Action, Passion, or Motion, and take notice of their Qualities, &c. then we put the Article before them ; as, *el Omnipotente Dios, el Dios de Misericordia* ; the Almighty God, the God of Mercy ; *el invencible e intrépido General*, the invincible, and intrepid General : *el Rey, la Reina, el Príncipe, la Princesa, y el Duque de Cumberland irán à la comédia éste noche*, the King, the Queen, the Prince, the Princess, and the Duke of Cumberland will go to the Play-house this Night ; and so before other common Words.

Thirdly, Before the Numerals is never made use of the Article, but when they are taken relatively ; as, *los dos viniéron*, the two came ; *los doce meses del año*, the twelve Months of the Year ; *los siéte días de la*

de la *semana*, the seven Days of the Week ; *las doce Tribus*, *los doce Apóstoles*, *los doce pares de Fráncia*, *las quátro partes del Mundo*, &c. and so are *úno*, *otro*, *qual*, the Particples, and some of the Infinitives ; as, *el uno*, the one, &c. *lo digo*, the above said, *el comér*, *el beber y el dormir*, *con Moderación*, *bacén bien al cuérpo*, to eat, to drink, and to sleep with Moderation, does good to the Body.

The Particle *an* so much us'd in *English* is omitted in *Spanish* ; for tho' we say, another Man, another Day, they only say as the Latin, *otro hombre*, *otro día*, not *un otro hombre*, or *un otro día*.

España has but seldom an Article, and *Serdéñia*, *Portugál*, *Secilia*, and *cándia* never.

CHAP. II.

Of the Construction of Nouns.

WHEN two Substantives of diverse Significations, do so come together, that the Latter in some kind or other seem to be possessed, or depend of the former, then the latter is put in the Genitive Case ; as, *el amor de Díos es mas perfecto*, the Love of God is the most perfect : *amor del Pádre*, the Love of a Father ; *la Ternéza de la Mádre*, the Tenderness of a Mother ; *la Eloquéncia de Cicerón*, the Eloquence of Cicero, &c. And often this Genitive is turned into an Adjective ; as, *el amor Divino*, the Divine Love ; *el Amor Paterno*, the fatherly Love ; *la Ternéza Materna*, the Motherly Tenderness, &c.

An Adjective in the Neuter Gender put alone without a Substantive, standeth for a Substantive, and

and may have a Genitive Case after it ; *déme un poco de lo mucho, y algo de lo poco*, give me a little of the much, and something of the little you have ; *lo prudente de Don Pedro nos admira*, the prudent Part of Don Peter surprises us, &c.

The Nouns of Praise, and Dispraise, of Want, of Arts, Sciences, all proper Names of Cities, Towns, &c. of God, all proper Names of Men, Women, Spirits good and bad, of irrational Creatures, of inanimates, of Months, Nouns of Measure, &c. coming after a Noun Substantive, or a Verb Substantive may be put with the Preposition *de* ; as *Mucbácbo de buen ingénio*, a Boy of a good Wit ; *bómbre de mal Credito*, a Man of bad Credit or Reputation ; *Maestro de Musica*, a Master of Music ; *Professór de Theología*, a Professor of Divinity ; *la Cása de Pédro*, Peter's House ; *la ciudad de Lóndres*, the City of London ; *la voluntad de Dios*, the Will of God, &c.

Sometimes the Genitive Case is put alone, the former Substantive being understood by Eclypsis ; as *recibí dos Cártas, la de Pédro leí, pero no la de mi Correspondiente*, I receiv'd two Letters, I read that of Peter's, but not that of my Correspondent.

Of the Construction of Adjectives.

Adjectives that signify Desire, Knowledge, Remembrance, Ignorance, or Forgetting, and such other like require a Genitive ; as *codicíoso de dinéro*, covetous of Money ; *ignorante de todo*, ignorant of all things, &c.

Nouns Partitives, and certain Interrogatives, with certain Nouns of Numbers, require Genitive ; as *algún*, *ningún*, *solo*, *úno*, *qualquier*, *dos*, *tres*, *Primero*, *segundo*, &c. *algún de vosotros*, somebody of you, *el primero de vosotros*, the first of you.

Rómulo

Rómulo fue el Primero de los Reyes de Roma, Romulus was the first of the Kings of Rome; *de que se tráta en Londres?* *de Guerra,* what are you about in London? or what talke you in London? of War; *de quien se bábla?* *de los Turcos,* of whom speak they? of the Turks.

Adjectives signifying Fulness, Emptiness, Plenty, or Want, require *de*; as, *lleno de agua*, full of Water; *falto de juicio*, without his Senses. And sometime they require the Preposition *en*; as *abundante de todo*, or *en todo*, plentiful, or well stored with every Thing; *Rico de bienes*, or *en bienes temporales*, *y Pobre de los*, or *en los espirituales*, rich in temporal Goods, and poor in the spiritual, &c.

Digno, and *indigno*, require a Genitive; as, *sói digno*, or *indigno de bónra*, I am worthy or unworthy of Honour. But *adornado*, *conténto*, *descontento*, *alegre*, &c. will have *de* or *con*, as, *este quarto está adornado de preciosas alájas*, or *con preciosas alájas*, this Room is adorned with fine Furniture; *Conténto* and *Descontento*, require likewise *en*, as, *estó contento de ésto*, *con ésto*, or *en ésto*, I am contented with this, &c.

Adjectives, whereby is signified Profit, Disprofit, Likeness, Unlikeness, submiting or belonging to something, govern a Dative Case; as, *útil*, *provechoso*, *cómodo*, *Bueno*, *conveniente*, *gustoso*, *málo*, *rendido*; *iguál*, *desiguál*, *semejante*, *parecido*, *confórme*, &c. as, *será útil à Pédro el trabajár*, working will be profitable to Peter; and so are those of Affinity, which likewise are construed with a Genitive; as, *sói Pariénte de Fuláno* or *à Fuláno*, I am a Relation of, or to such a one.

Add to these some of the Verbals in *ble*, as *amable*, *dable*, &c.

N. B. That the Nouns of Measure of Length, Breadth, or Thickness of any Thing, is put in the Accusative, and the Adjective in the Genitive; as, *esta tórre tiene cien piés de alto*, this Tower is one hundred Feet

R high;

high; *éste Páño tiene dos vás de áncbo*, this Cloth has two Yards in Breadth.

Some Adjectives govern the Ablative Case; as, *con*, or *en la cólera estoi amarillo*, *y con la ira colérico*, *y con sus amenázas temeroso*, I am pale for being angry, angry with Wrath, and with his Threatning timorous.

There are Ablatives Absolutes, (so called for their having no dependance in the Speech) as *acabada la céna*, the Supper being finished, or having supt; *quitada la Causa*, *césa el efecto*, the Cause being remov'd, the effect ceased.

The Ablative of the Instrument is made in Spanish with the Preposition *con*, with; as *lo bice con el Martillo*, I have done it with the Hammer.

The Words *expérto*, *experimentado*, *Perito*, *versádo*, *cursádo*, &c. require an Ablative with *en*; as *versádo en libros*, versed in Books.

Of the Numerals.

The Numerals may be divided into Cardinals; as, *uno*, *dos*, *tres*, &c.

Ordinals; as, *Primero*, *segundo*, *tercero*, &c.

Distributives, as, *de uno en uno*, *de dos en dos*, *de tres en tres*, &c.

Partitives, as *cada uno*, *uno y otro*, *alguno*, &c.

Collectives, as *una docena*, *quincena*, *veintena*, *treintena*, &c. a dozen and no more in English, they saying in its stead twenty, thirty, &c. *el quinto*, the fifth; *la diézma*, a tenth, &c.

Of Augmentation; as *lo doble*, *lo triple*, *lo quadruple*, &c.

Universal, as *todo*, *ninguno*, *nada*.

Particular; as, *alguno*, *alguien*, &c.

All which govern the Genitive Case; as, *el Primero de todos*, the first of all.

Of the Comparatives.

The Comparatives *mas*, more ; *ménos*, less, govern *que*, than, in which the force of the Comparison lies ; *el todo es Mayór que la parte*, the Whole, or the Compound is greater or bigger than the Part ; *su Malicia es peór que la de el diablo*, it's Malice is worse than that of the Devil's ; and so in *mejór*, *menór*. Now for the Regular Comparatives ; as, *es mas sábio que Salomón*, is wiser than Solomon ; *es mas Hermósa que Racbel*, is more beautiful than Rachel ; *es ménos prudente que su Hermáno*, is less prudent than his Brother.

They govern likewise *deloque*, than what ; as, *es mas Docto deloque se piensa*, is more learned than what it is thought ; *es mas afortunado deloque merece*, is more lucky than what he deserves.

When the Articles *el*, *la*, *lo* are put before *mas*, then it governs the Genitive ; as, *es el mas discreto de los hombres*, he is the discreetest of Men ; *la mas afable de todas las Mugéres*, the most affable of all Women ; *lo mas selecto de todo*, the most select of all, of every Thing.

They govern also the Preposition *entre* ; as, *es la mas Hermósa entre todas las Mugéres*, is the most beautiful among all Women ; *es el mas Docto entre todos los del Colegio*, is the most learned among all those of the College. Some Spanish Writers put *de* before *entre* ; as, *es el mas señalado de entre sus condiscípulos*, is the most signified from among his School-Fellows. By which the curious may observe the several Constructions that the Comparatives will bear.

The Examples with the Article before *mas*, are called Relative Superlatives, and the following absolute or independing ; which end in *íssimo* *íssima* *érrimo-ma*, &c. as *prudentíssimo*, most discreet ;